PHARSAMOND:

New Knight-Errant.

17 In which is introduced 49 -

The Story of the Fair ANCHORET,

With that of TARMIANA and her unfortunate Daughter.

Written Originally in FRENCH,

By Monsieur de MARIVAUX,

Member of the French Academy in P ARISE
Author of the Life of MARIANNE, &c.

Translated by Mr. LOCKMAN.

VOLUME THE FIRST.

DUBLIN:

Printed by George Faulkner, in Bfin-Arret.

MDCGL.



B

ERRATA in Vol. I.

Programmi Phillip nt

age.	L	ine .			4. 1	1	
13	3	4 afte	r all pu	ta Col	on; and	in the	next line
68				Colon ini gin agai	to a Com	ma.	p
18					wait	Ger-	
78	8	for	the read	our.			Water
80-	. 3	for	actions)	read a	Lion.		
	1	K G	ti va	almost.	Arres 11	cili dis	Charles II

and the art of the commen

Wenia BHI BMUJOY

PUBLISHED BY GROWN IN PROPERTY OF THE PROPERTY

b

iı

L

tl

in

it

te

be

A

*

RIGHT HONOURABLE THE

Earl of MIDDLESEX.

Master of the Horse to his Royal Highness the PRINCE of WALES.

MY LORD:

Lordship, to cast an Eye on the following Sheets, when disengag'd a Moment from the noble Studies which you cultivate with so much success. In granting this humble Request, your Lordship will imitate Persons of the greatest Rank and Abilities in all Ages; who did not think it derogated from Their Character, to devote some of their unbended Hours to the lighter Amusements of Literature.

A 2 I wish

DEDICATION.

I wish that the Tribute which I have the Honour to offer, was more worthy of your Lordship; but it is the only One I am now posses'd of: And, a Circumstance which forbids my laying this Translation at any other Feet than those of your Lordship, is; to your Beneficence I. owe the Leisure I had to go through with it; a Beneficence which, at the same time that it is my Glory, has chear'd some Years of my Life; and made it my Duty to implore that Heaven wou'd shower down every Bleffing on your Lordship.

The Publick are, in general, infensible of the singular Obligations They frequently have, to the Patrons of Writers whose Works afford Them the highest Instruction or Pleasure. To

the

DEDICATION.

They often are indebted for the finest Performances; and no House has been the happy Occasion of giving Birth to a greater Number of such, than the illustrious One from which your Lordship sprung, and of which you are so bright an Ornament.

All Who have the honour of approaching your Lordship, and the Countess of Middlesex, immediately perceive themselves introduc'd among the Muses and the Graces: In a Place where Subjects of the greatest Dignity, and Those of a slowery Kind, are alternately treated; where Favours are conserr'd with that Chearfulness with which Gifts are usually receiv'd; where Sweetness of Temper spreads a Charm over every Conversation,

,

e t

3

e

DEDICATION.

My Heart wou'd say infinitely more, but I shall break off for fear of giving Offence; only befeeching the Continuance of your Lordship's Patronage, as being one of the chief Comforts of my Life. In these Sentiments I beg leave to subscribe myself, with all imaginable Veneration,

MY LORD:

. 2.



Your Lordship's most oblig'd,

and most devoted

bumble Servant,

J. Lockman.

ab

PREFACE

By the Translator.

IHE Author of the following Sheets is well known in all the polite Parts of Europe, by means of a variety of Writings He has publish'd; and which gained him so much Applause, in his native Country, that He was judg'd worthy of a Seat in that * Assembly, whence some of the noblest literary Productions have issued.

The Translation of the present Work was a very pleasing task to me, and I spared no Pains in the drawing of it up. Compositions of this Sort, (I speak of those in Prose) wherein there is such a variety of opposite Characters, are, of all Others, the most difficult to transsuse with Spirit into another Language; and as one of the chief Merits, (next to planning) in uch Pieces, is the Style or Colouring; the Failure, in this Point, must render a Translation of the finest Original, insupportable. The principal Requisite, I imagine, in the Version of a Work of Genius,

is, that it be a faithful Copy, fo far as the Idioms and Figures will allow, of the Original, and itself have the Air of one: Without the latter Perfection, a Translation must be flat; nor can the Want of that Quality be duly compensated for by any Other. The same Difference may be perceived, between a good and bad Translation of a valuable Work of Wit and Humour, as in a smart Story well or ill told. For this Reason, I not only endeavour'd to avoid Gallicisms; but even gave, whenever I thought This cou'd be done with Propriety, an English termination to the Names of Perfons. This reconcileth, still more, an English Reader's Mind to fuch a Work; in like manner as a Foreigner's conforming Himself to the Dress of a Country, is more pleasing to the Eyes of its Natives.

I speak with the greater Considence on these Heads, as the publick have been particularly indulgent to one of my English Versions, drawn up according to these Rules; I mean the very ingenious M. de Voltaire's Letters concerning the English

Nation.



ıt

11

,

d I

es

'n

g

re

0.

n

1-

fh

fe

de

fo

PHARSAMOND.

the street of the Ara R T Arabic for the failure

incipie ex light and off that

the profesion and amplication to the design of the

N two neighbouring villages, dwelt two young persons of the same age. The one was a virgin, whose father had been dead many years; the living under the tutelage of a mother, a most worthy woman, who was far advanc'd in years, and lady of the village, where fhe was passing the remainder of her days in peace and tranquillity. The other was a young gentleman, who, in his tender years, had lost both his parents. An uncle who had grown old in camps, and was remarkable for that openness of heart which so greatly distinguished our ancestors; a gentleman abhorrent of formality; once the most courteous knight the ladies had in their fervice, prefided over the education of this nephew, and fashion'd him agreeably to his inclination. The old gentleman endeavour'd to inspire daily, into his nephew, those ideas, with which his reverence VOL. I. for

for the fair-fex, and his martial disposition, still filled his own mind. Oldromances, such as Amadis de Gaul, Ariosto, and so many other books of that kind, feemed to him the finest lessons, and best adapted to fire the young man with those noblest of passions, love and glory. Unhappily for the nephew, his foul was valley susceptible of every impression of this fort. The exalted feats atchieved by heroes, he read of in the above books; the melting fondness with which he saw them actuated, prov'd like to many tharks of fire, which, one moment, inflam'd his martial temper; and the next, hightned his amorous disposition. phew's uninterrupted application to studies of this nature, firmly perfuaded the uncle, that the young man would one day ferve as a model for the finished gentleman. He would often make him repeat what he had read; and this enthusiastic youth, quite intoxicated with pleasure, used to expatiate in conjunction with his uncle, on every incident peculiarly tender or marvellous; and fo heated was the wouth's imagination, that he, when wrapt in thought, would frequently improve on the wild whimfies of the most extravagant knight-errants. As the uncle's admiration was increasing perpetuallv. fo the nephew's frenzy role in proportion. The young man was already become almost the only theme of conversation, with which the uncle used to regale all who came to visit him. Our youth was finely shaped, sprightly; and the sentiments of his heart, together with the turn of his mind, added to his charming face, a je ne fçai quoi fo noble, fo ferious, as attracted every eye. In a word, nature feemed to have fent our young man into the world, for him to be, one day, an illustrious adventurer. When but eighteen, his uncle had fome thoughts of feeking out a wife for him; and, for that purpose, had introduced him to the

most beautiful young maidens in the neighbour-hood. They were so much delighted with his person, that they all strove to win him. To some he had sigh'd; and display'd, before them, that amorous eloquence which engross'd his whole thoughts. The most tender, the most melting situations, were extasy to our youth. He sought eagerly for such situations, complained without the least cause, and wou'd frequently be lost in thought from the like motive; and though persectly well received wherever he came, he yet was always uneasy, and continually repeating the words rigour, cruelty.

He would almost exhaust himself, in deploring calamities which the fair did not bring upon him; whilst they, on the other hand, would be quite out of breath in protesting that he was far from being disagreeable to them; but the easy access he was allowed to them, and their perpetual gainty, shocked our young man to a prodigious degree. As this behaviour of theirs did not give him an opportunity of imitating his heroes, he resolved to be one at any rate: and he would have thought it infinitely beneath the dignity of his sentiments, to have run after hearts, which submitted at once to his power, without exposing him to even a single torment.

1

1

d

e

e

is

i

a

h

d

Escionition

He now wou'd read the adventures of a lover, who, pierc'd to the foul at feeing his passion slighted, made the forests eccho with his complaints; and who, become a prey to despair, would have stabbed himself, had he not been luckily prevented by his squire. The condition of this lover would engross his whole thoughts, and his tender lamentations rais'd the strongest emotions in his soul; his sate appeared to him wretched; he would envy this lover's inselicity, and sound therein a marvellous B a happiness

happiness which he himself panted to feel. But then, how to bring this about ! for, in the midft of fuch delightful reflections; his miftress would run up to him; and burfting into a laugh, entertain him with fome trifling particular, with which the infifted he should be no less diverted than herfelf.—On these occasions he was forced to suppress the numberless fine things he had to utter, though he was ready to burst with a repletion of noble fentiments. How great a mortification was all this to him! the fair-ones requir'd him to be eafy in his mind, to be gay, and no ways doubt their affeverations of his being dear to them. What strange love is all this! (wou'd he fay to himself) can so perfect a tranquillity be confishent with an exalted foul? shall I love a heart whose conquest is easy? a heart free from pride, from feverity, and wholly infentible to the merit of mine? Ah! no (wou'd he add) let me break from an engagement which is altogether unworthy of me. Let this fair-one bestow her heart on some lover, the cast of whose mind may be mean and narrow as her own. Let me leave to the vulgar, inclinations which are abhorrent to great fouls like mine. Since heaven has given me a mind susceptible of the noblest impressions; as I feel in myself that fource of greatness, which once inspir'd the breafts of renown'd heroes, of so different a cast from the rest of mankind; let me wait till heaven shall present me with opportunities, in which I may be no less eminently distinguish'd. Providence, I make no doubt, referves for my heart, fome object who may be worthy of its possession; and either chance, or some particular adventure, will manifest its defigns with regard to me .-Such were the reflections our young man would frequently make; and these he revolved so often, that he was, at last determined to wait for the auspicious

auspicious moment, when heaven, by an invincible sympathy, might unite his heart to that of some sair charmer. He forsook all the young women to whom his uncle had introduced him, and would not hear the least mention of wedlock; imagining that should he marry, the glorious reputation which he so sondly slattered himself he might one day acquire, would be lost for ever; whereas, before he had gone those immortal lengths, he was to fill the world with his name, and the rumour of his missortunes. In vain his uncle pressed him; not a word more would he hear of mistresses.

These were in no manner heroines, they having discovered a passion for him, without allowing him time to let their cruelty fink him to despair; and, for this reason, he conjur'd his uncle never to hint any thing of this kind to him more. However, the old gentleman was far from approving any of those reasons; and would observe to his kinfman, that although he was rich, he yet ought not to reject any advantageous offers which might be made him; that the young women proposed to him, were adorn'd with every grace, both of mind and person; that they lov'd him; and therefore their charms, join'd to the advantages of birth, deferv'd all the attention of a person of his character. Farther, that he had introduced him as a polite young gentleman, who every way claimed respect; but that the contempt he discover'd for fuch women, greatly lessen'd the opinion which the world would otherwise have entertained of his good breeding. - Such were the reprimands of his uncle, whose frank and steady temper no ways tallied with that of his nephew, in this refpeet; but having a strong affection for him, he ceased his remonstrances: The kinsman left thus undisturb'd, withdrew from all company. His B 3

e

lf

e

st

m

·I

4-

t,

1;

e,

ıld

n,

he

us

only employments, now, were hunting and fifting; and woods and groves became the fole confidants of the deep reflections with which his study,

of books of chivalry, had filled his mind.

Having spent a whole year in this indolent state, it happen'd one day, as he follow'd his uncle in the chace, and that the vigour with which both purfued a ftag, had carried the nephew at a great diffance from his relation; that he recollected a certain knight-errant, whose foul was all indifference; and who, quenching his thirst at a clear fpring, had fpied a lovely fair-one, whose beauteous aspect charm'd him, dissolv'd in slumbers. The noise which the knight-errant made, in rising up, wak'd the beauteous sleeper, which instantly fill'd him with a respectful bashfulness. Hence he did not dare discover to this enchanting object, the furprize with which he was feized, to find her fleeping in a lonely forest; and his surprize had been attended with all the symptoms of a rising slame. The nymph, on her perceiving the knight, blush'd, and was ftruck dumb; but withdrew however from him in fuch a manner, as show'd that her blushes did not arise from natred. The knight, struck with awe, had not dared to follow her. All he did was, to muse on this adventure; to set out wrapt in thought, and to stop but a little after; feeling, too intenfely, that this miracle in beauty: had ftole way his heart. The adventure of this knight, with which our kinfman regaled himfelf, appeared to him charming; and confidering it as fomething great and admirable, he earnestly wished that the like accident might put an end to that coldness and indifference, which he was firmly refolved to preserve, till the mighty moment decreed for his defeat.

Big with this romantic idea, he heard the voice of a woman, who seemed to speak to another per-

fon; when listening, he heard her break into the

following words.

1.

S

,

S

147

at

?-

d

100

CE

1-1

n;

' No, dear Fatima, (faid she) his heart and mine were not formed one for the other. His flame is of too vulgar a kind; he loves me dearly I confess, but then I am not satisfied with his manner of loving. I'll have nothing to do with an ordinary passion; that which I myself would feel, for a person who was to affect me, would be too noble and too tender; and require, in a lover, a foul which might correspond with the dignity of mine. Add to this, that the adventure, which brought about our acquaintance, is not fingular enough. Hearts form'd by heaven to unite, are affected only by some surprizing chance. Persons of this turn, feel an emotion at their first seeing one another; but I myself have not been struck with that emotion which is the prelude to a noble passion. Cease therefore; (Fatima) to mention him, fince twill be imposfible for me to love him.

As the found of the speaker's voice, and her words were like those which become the heroine of a romance; his meeting her in a solitary forest, threw him into such agitations, as proved to him, that a period would at last be put to his coldness and indifference. Hereupon, advancing to that side whence the voice proceeded; the noise of his

feet obliged the fair speaker to retire.

He saw the nymph, who, leaning on her waiting-woman, was making off with all the speed in her power. But now advancing respectfully towards her, he thus spoke, in imitation of the knight whom he had just before called to mind.—

Fair lady, whither sty you; stop a moment; and permit me to enjoy the delightful surprize of meeting here with so enchanting a creature. Assemble on the state of t

address you to the least want of respect: heaven

will bear me witness, that the reverence with which I am, this inflant, struck for you, is infi-

inite; but (sweetest lady) 'tis not in my power

to check the impulse I now feel, any more than

that which drew my fleps towards you. Language could never paint the confusion I am in at

beholding you. I know not whether this decla-

ration may offend you; but this I am certain

of, that my Heart never felt the like emotion be-

fore.

These words broke from him with the utmost impetuosity; he did not dare list up his eyes to behold the fair-one who affected him so strongly, but waited in silence, and with down-cast eyes, for her answer, which was as follows.

answer, which was as follows.

I ascribe (too hardy knight) to our unexpected meeting, your present boldness; and if any thing can revenge me for your present intrusion, 'tis the consolation of being but one moment more exposed to the danger of seeing you lose the respect due to persons of my desert.'—

Bright lady ' replied the young man, (whom the

Bright lady,' replied the young man, (whom the pleasure of hearing himself stiled knight, had almost struck dumb) with what justice can you accuse me of being any ways wanting in respect?

forgive me if I presume to declare, that I could

wish to remove from you, at the price of my life, an opinion, which I should term unjust in

any other person. You have reason to say, that

you shall have taken a complete revenge, fince I

I hall never fet eyes on you more; but then you don't know the difmal consequences of that

vengeance. My forrow for having offended

you; the loss I shall sustain in seeing you no

more.' — 'Hold, cry'd the fair-one; demonfrate to me, by breaking off from this discourse,

that you would be very forry to offend me : and

fince you appear fo exceedingly grieved for having done this, permit me to stop your

n

I

n

ıţ

d

10

n-

e,

nd

ce

fold h .

from the total the total particular transcents Saying these words, she was withdrawing, when the knight, fir'd to the foul with love, and rouz'd by an emotion still more violent than the former; or rather animated with the fervor of a young novice, advanc'd again; when throwing himself at the feet of the fair-one; he befought her (kiffing with the utmost eagerness the hem of her garment) not to go away, till after the had given bim the strongest assurances of burying his crime in everlasting oblivion. - I tremble for fear (continued he) left every word I may now utter should also be a crime. But, (fairest of the creation) I shall certainly die, if you give me the least cause to suspect your being offended. Graciously condescend, by one single word, to deliver an ill-fated wretch from the eternal forrow in which you will plunge him, should you still persist in keeping silence.

These words and the strong emotion which appeared in his whole form, inspired the lovely fugitive with tender compassion. A blush which it was impossible for her to suppress, discovered part of what the would gladly have concealed. Then casting on the youth, a look which darted comfort into his foul :- 'Go, Sir knight,' (fays the, with a voice no longer expressive of anger) 'I will condescend to forgive your boldness, for the fake s of your repentance, which I think fincere. Live, my wrath is appeas'd, nor will I again harbour any against you.

Gods! was ever mortal more completely bleft than our knight? The foft strain in which the fair-one had delivered herself a moment before, filled him with a joy next to extafy; whence he was unable for a long time to utter a word. At

B 5

last, after kissing once again her garment; — 'I'
will, says he, live, (O miracle in beauty and
goodness!) since you permit it; but then I will
live for no other purpose than to call to mind the
inchanting sweetness of your disposition. But
if this dear remembrance should induce me
henceforward to take care of my life; will it be

s possible for me to preserve it for any time, fince

I am going to lose you?

Sir knight, replied the lady, I must leave vou, else you will no longer deserve the favour I would indulge you; and I should be forry, were you to forfeit my good opinion.' - Saying these words, she retired. As for our young man, he no longer had the power to follow her; but continuing in the fame posture, like one thunderstruck, the trees foon stole her from his fight. -And have I lost you (cried he) alas! what will become of wretched me? must the auspicious day, in which my eyes were first blest with fuch an affemblage of beauties, ferve only as the prelude to calamities, which (perhaps) may be endless? - After venting these sad complaints, he rose up, loosed his horse's bridle which had been tied to a tree; and again mounted his courfer, in order to trace out, if possible, the way which the unknown fair had taken.

Scarce had he rode an hundred paces, when he met his uncle, who was returning from the sport, with all the jolly hunters. As confusion and tumult are hateful to a person so strongly agitated as our knight then was, he would gladly have shunn'd them; but his uncle having perceiv'd his kinsman, called him; when observing his pensive air, he enquir'd the cause of his being thus wrapt in thought.

—'The solitude and silence (replied the nephew)
which I have been indulged, since I was slung out of
the chace, must contribute to give me the air in
which

which I now appear to your eyes; our knight carefully concealing the adventure he had met with, whence his great absence of mind seemed the more mysterious. His uncle now informed him of every thing which had happened in the chace, during his absence; and discoursing together in this manner, they got home. Some neighbouring gentlemen, who had thared in the fport, fupped that night with them. On this occasion, the company eat and drank very heartily, the nephew excepted; who could scarce do either; he being too great an adept in remance, to fail in this particular; so that absence of thought and anxiety. formed his most delicious entertainment during the repast. His uncle endeavoured, but in vain, to rouse him from the melancholy in which he seem'd plunged; but it not being possible for the guests to prevail with him to share in the delights which Bacchus then dispens'd, they suspected that some fair-one had captivated him .- Thou now, dear kinfman, (faid the old uncle) must certainly be ' in love, or I am an utter stranger to that passion. I suspect, that, during thy absence from us, thou half made fome discovery, which must have o robb'd thee of thy heart.'- At the bare found of the word diferery, our young man vented a deep figh, and threw up his eyes towards heaven. The guests, now intoxicated with joy, no less than with wine, rallied the young sportsman; when each of them presented him with a glass of wine to drown his passion, which (they declared) was not yet mighty enough to escape the deluge of liquor. However, all their endeavours were to no purpose, he being very fensible, that it was incumbent on him to be abfent in thought; and as this was the decorum, the maxim laid down by all romantic lovers, our knight would have chose neyer to drink again in his life, rather than violate laws.

laws, which, he imagined, ought to be inviolably observed by all who profess to love in a manner truly heroic. The repast being ended, the neighbouring gentlemen retired to their respective homes, and our young man shut himself up in his chamber. Hitherto the reslections formed by him had been vague and unfixed by any object. What joy must it be, for him now to find, in his own situation, a subject for those exalted ideas he had so

long borrowed from others?

The reader will naturally suppose, that our knight mutter'd to himself; that he bemoaned his fad fate, that he walked up and down like one in despair; and that it being now fully in his power, to indulge in the exquifite pleasure of loving like a hero, he was not sparing either of fighs or fobs. In the night, however, he gave some truce to his evils, in order to reflect on the means of discovering the deity who was the object of his adoration. Already, as a reward for the title of knight, with which she had honoured him; he, in the midft of his dolors, had called her, above an hundred times, princess. But now his impatience to fee her again, and to find out the magnificent palace in which this miracle in beauty must relide, made him form a refolution to mount on horseback at break of day, and fet out. A young man, who had been brought up in his uncle's house, and was of near the same age with our knight; was to accompany him in quality of his squire. The knight was very fond of this young man. The similitude of their tempers, and their femblant turn of mind, had induced him to truft the other with all his fecrets. 'Twas in conjunction with this young man, that he had purfued his romantic studies; fo that the brain of the squire was no less apt to turn round, than that of the knight, him was a wayor simulation m make an about The

The instant day appeared, he started up, put on his clothes, and went and wak'd his fquire, whom he informed of his noble refolution. The fquire. overjoyed at his being called upon to share in fo curious a fearch, which poffibly might be followed by a delightful interview, role and dreffed also promiting to acquit himfelf of the feveral duties of a squire, with as much honour as a thousand other fquires in romance; all whom he named, and whose history he recollected, as he was huddling on his clothes. The fquire being now ready, our two adventurers fet: out, the knight riding before. Some critic will doubtless object, that it was not possible for this young gentleman to perfuade himfelf that he was really a knight, fince he was not armed like a gentleman of that order. But to this I answer, that his folly was not yet rifen to fuch a pitch, as to induce him to refemble his book-heroes in every respect. The only circumstance relating to them, in which he delighted, was the species of tenderness they discovered in love: he was charm'd with their adventures: those I mean, into which they were drawn, either by the rigour of their mistresses, or from their losing them. Such were the adventures he was ambitious of meeting with; his wild extravagance not being yet got to so great a height, as to make him fancy that he hewed real giants in two, or fought against magicians. The impression which his fludy of romances had left upon him, was a passion for heroic love; and this was forcible enough to make him despise the most imminent danger. In a word, his folly was a compound of extravagant valour and ridiculous love, this was all, with regard to the title of knight: as he was born a gentleman, this was sufficient to delude his imagination fo far, as to make him be deceived and pleafed at one and the same time. 2112194 But

e

n

đ

1-

1-

S.

ne

in

an

be

But to return to the march of our adventurers, which I had left for the take of an almost useless

be interested as Ivis mobile reformion.

digression.

The knight (as was observed) rode first, his hat flopped, and his eyes almost hid. He now abandoned himself up entirely to his amorous thoughts; when only a few fighs interrupted the deep filence intowhich forrow and anxiety had plunged him. The fauire, the worthy follower of fo illustrious a malter, rode after him without once opening his lips ; and was delighted with the subaltern part which he play'd in this noble adventure. Three whole hours flid away, without their passing so much as a fingle circumstance worthy of notice. They were now come into the fame wood, where our lovers had met fo delightfully the day before. The view of these scenes increased the knight's disquietude and his fighs. He stopped his horse, inorder to gaze, with the Bronger passion, on the place where he had discoursed with this angel of a woman. His eyes were particularly fixed on that foot, where she had been so gracious as to forgive his crime. He called his fquire, who was furveying him with admiration, and who, (perhaps) in his own mind, thought himself superlatively happy, in belonging to one who acted his part with fo much dignity. The fquire approaching: Doft thou see you by-path, you cross-walk? my dear Clito; this name flowing naturally from our knight; and being a favourite one in romance, he therefore had bestowed it on his squire along time before) 'tis there, (continued he) that, kneeling at her feet, I heard her coral lips pro-' nounce the following words, live; my weath is ' appealed.' - The squire at the sound of these mellifluent expressions, expanded his eyes; and as hounds (if the reader will forgive the comparison) when eager for their prey, fniff about for the feent; thus

thus our squire surveyed these scenes attentively, impatient to see the lovely object, from whom the

abovementioned words had dropped.

After that the one had devoted fome moments to fighs, and the other to curiofity, they advanced forward; when they beheld, on a fudden, a gentleman riding full fpeed, and attended by a fervant. This gentleman feemed a person of some consequence. Our knight, whom I shall hereafter call PHARSAMOND, rode afther this gentleman, from a ftrong defire to know whither he was going, After galloping about half an hour, Pharfamond perceived, at a distance, a noble mansion, which his uncle had never pointed out to him. The person whom he followed, alighted at the mansion gate, and entered it. The gentleman's youth, his air, the small distance between this manfion, and the place where he had met the unknown fair-one: these several circumstances united, made him conclude that his mistress must certainly refide there; and that this handsome gentleman must be a lover who was going to visit her. Fired with this notion, he turned fuddenly to his fquire, and fpoke thus: -- 'I am (Clito) the most ill-fated lover that ever inhabited this earth. As though it were not enough, that I am forced to combat the cruelty of her whom I adore, I am (my good Clito) curfed with a rival; or rather two. if I may believe the words which were utter'd vefterday. But, of these two rivals, one must surely be dear to the fair one; and my heart whifpers to me, that 'tis he who this moment went into the mansion.' --- 'As to rivals, (said Clito) 'twill be happy for you if there are any, fince your conquests will thereby be the more glori-But why must you fancy that he must " needs be beloved by the lady? good, my lord, harbour not fo perplexing a thought, it not ape pearing

' pearing ever fo little probable. The air and manner in which the peerless fair-one pronoun-

ced the sweetest words, ought to suppress all

vour fears. She would not have commanded you

to live, had she not wished that you should live for her only is no blo had trait man in the want

- By this time the morning was almost elapsed, when Pharfamond, though tortured by love and icalousy, yet found himself so greatly fatigued, that he dismounted in order to rest himself a few moments. 'Twas not above an hundred paces from the place where he stopped, to the mansion. As he was alighting, he happened to fpy a little garden-door open. This garden belonged to the great house abovementioned; and the door in question was left open, either by accident, or from the negligence of the gardener, whose cot lay near that place. Pharfamond entered this garden, to screen himself from the beams of the sun, which were fcorching. At his coming in he faw a wide, embowered walk or alley, and immediately flruck into it. This walk had several avenues; when, casting his eyes round, he spied, at the end of another fmall walk which terminated at that in which he was walking, a young lady in a most lovely dishabille. She fat on the flowery turf, having a book in her hand, and feemed wrapt in the deepest meditation. The posture in which she lave prevented Pharfamond from seeing her whole face; but the finall part he did discover of it inchanted him. Her head reclined on one of her hands, and the other hung down carelesty. He was charmed both with her hand and arm, they vying in whiteness with the lilly. He found himself touched: when confidering this emotion as a mark of infidelity towards the fair stranger, he blushed, accufed himself, and in spite of those reproaches, imagined that the nearer he advanced, the more guilty

ty he would be. The posture of the fair-one whom he was gazing at, her shape, which was no ways injured by her elegant dress all exposed him to the danger of being fickle; and he was upon the point of going back, when the lady changed her attitude, and discovered to Pharfamond, as the moved, the same face, the same features, the bare glimpfe of which had before to ffrongly captivated him, and which he panted to fee again. The nymph was going to fly him; but he ran fo fwiftly, that he had just time to stop her, and fall on his knees. - 'I fee too plainly (faid he) that you ' confider my meeting you in this garden as a new crime; but, (fairest of the creation) tis all owing to chance, and therefore deprive me not of the felicity it has procured me. I indeed fought for it, but did not expect to find it here.'- He then told her how he had got into the garden; revealed to her all his folicitude; the pleasure he found in feeing her at a diffance before he knew who she was; and how strongly he had reproached himself for that pleasure; in fine, he gave her an ample relation of the languishing state of his soul; calfing hearen to witness, the necessity he was under of adoring her beauties to the last gasp; imploring no other favour, than that the would indulge him the compassion which the most ill-fated lovers meet with. He confessed, that he could not expect the least returns; and that the bare reflection on his exalted happiness, threw him into such an extasy of joy as was almost fatal. He only conjured her, to permit him to wear his chains: - In this manner he ran on, with the greatest impetuolity; the lady liftening to him the whole time, with fo much ardour, that the did not lofe one fyllable. At last he stopped, fearing he had said too much; but showed, at the same time, by a most submisfive

d

d

4

-

1

1-

1-

lty five action, that his filence was owing much more to his want of breath, than to any failure in point

of tenderness.

The lady, who had given her whole attention to this discourse, being delighted with his turn of mind; and still more with his manner of thinking, continued irresolute for some moments, and did not know what answer to make. She had conceived an affection for Pharsamond, the very first moment she saw him; was tempted to give way to this affection, but pride restrained her. However, 'twas now incumbent on her to fix on some resolution, and that immediately.

This was all she could do in so irresolute a state. - Courteous knight, (faid the fair-one) I will own that the fight of you surprized me. I at first imagined that a passion, which can no ways be considered as respectful, had invited you hither, and that you knew I was in this place. · You declare, that you came here merely by ace cident, and I am glad to find you less criminal on this account. The words I uttered yesterday, ought to have convinced you, that it would be to no purpose, for you to entertain a passion which must offend me. Nevertheless, the violence of your flame has prevailed over the refo-Iution I then took; you still love me, as is sufficiently proved by your various transports. Pride obliges me to condemn you to never see me more. I am fully fensible of the ties by which honour and duty bind me. But (good Sir knight) I pity you, and you are really an object of compassion. Respect combated, on my account, in your heart; now this respect appeafes my wrath; and inspires me with more gentle sentiments in your behalf. But flatter not yourself, that though I may not banish you

you my presence for ever, I therefore must. think favourably of your passion. All I mean is, to try whether my present mildness will have more effect on you than my anger yelterday.' - Fair lady! (cried Pharfamond). is it possible for you to extinguish a flame which, vour bright eyes have lighted up? and when once a heart has been captivated by your charms, can it break from them, merely through a defpair of ever meeting with a return of love?. ono (sweetest of your fex!) I am hurried along by my passion, spite of my utmost endeavours. to secure myself from it, and this passion can end only with my life. My fate is in your hands, and therefore dispose of it as you shall think proper; but then I befeech you not to put it out of my power to obey you, by your commanding me to eradicate the love with which I am fired for you.' - This we may justly term an imitation of what is called the lofty style. - The young lady, being a perfect mistress of it, was not a little delighted, to find herfelf the object of so noble a passion.

Pharsamond was the most dangerous man she had hitherto met with. Cedalisa imagined she saw, in this hero, one of those antient knighterants, who, captivated by her beauties, had found the secret of returning from the other world, to be again inslamed by the splendor of her eyes. Her looks were no ways inauspicious to Pharsamond, who still kneeling before her; —— 'Rise, 'rise, (said she) I blush to see you in this posture. I know not yet how far sate may permit me to include your slame; but as it would be needless for me to forbid your entertaining a 'passion for me, I shall not oppose it. However, 'I don't pretend to say, that I have the least inclination to return that love. I indeed ought

(Sir knight) to fly, and yet I liften to you. Require no more at my hands, and let us put an end to a conversation which has already been spun out to too great a length.'--- Since it must be so, (inchanting fair-one, replied Pharfamond) I will trouble you no longer with the particulars of a passion which is disagreeable to you: but (lovelieft creature) if you condemn me to a profound filence, end, at the fame time, my dreadful tortures. As you are the fweetest object in the creation, it will be impossible, wherever your charms appear, for " me not to meet with rivals; but, alas! how do I dread to meet with.' - Stop (faid the lady) and mention not suspicions which offend me. Believe that; if my heart were touch'd, 'twas only fince ... The nymph interrupted herfelf (for the would have added yesterday), and cast her eves on the ground. Books of chivalry are full of fach interruptions; and our fair-one made:

Pharfamond, as an intelligent, cautious knight, feigned not to understand what she meant. He pursued his discourse, and related the adventure which had filled him with such horrid anxiety. He gave the most accurate description of the gentleman whom he had followed; and was so exact in his relation, that she confess'd, she not only knew the person who caus'd his suspicions, but that she was beloved by him.— I did not imagine (continued she) it necessary for me to conceal from you, that the only motive of my coming into this garden, was, to avoid seeing him, as I'

a proper use, on this occasion, of her library.

knew that he would come and vifit me? ——

Gods! (cried Pharfamond) how delicious a calm do you diffuse over my soul, (bright princess)

for furely you deserve to be such; and I dare

inot suppose you of an inferior character, since. 4 among the numberless votaries who croud round 4 you, not a fingle one has been able to touch your heart. Leave me the fad, the delightful, of pleasure of loving you, and of displaying my passion at your feet. Permit me to see you, in order that I may contemplate, in your bright eyes, the compassion which you confess I deferve.' ---- Pharfamond, as he spoke these words, fell on his knees; but how great was his astonishment, when he saw the very same gentleman, whom he had followed to the manfion, coming forward! Our newly created princess had not power on this occasion, either to make use of her authority; or to preserve that tranquillity of mind which great fouls are wont to enjoy, in the most disastrous circumstances.

At this unexpected accident, the lady changed colour, and was struck dumb. The gentleman at his coming up to her, discovered all the symptoms of one in despair. What's this, madam? - (fays he;) do I fee a man at your feet? do I find you in a garden with no one but him; at the same time that hapless I am sent way, and told you are not at home. Heavens! is this the grandeur, the chimerical dignity of foul you * pretend to pride in? your only aim (ungrateful fair-one) is to impose upon me?' - At these words, Pharfamond, whose tongue assonishment had reftrained hitherto, could contain himself no longer.— My lord (faid he) or whomfoever you may be, know that your reproaches are injurious. You, indeed found me at the feet of this miracle in beauty, but then chance only directed me to this place. She never intended to admit me to her s presence; and had she condescended to see and discourse with me, you ought to have bemoan'd

t

2

1

o I

_

2

5)

re

vour fad fate on this account, and not break into fuch violent complaints. As to myfelf, it matters little whether you suspect my loving the alady, or otherwise; and, to keep you even from e needless tortures, I will inform you that I am captivated by her. Yes (Sir) you behold in me a rival; and such I will be of all those who shall orefume to love her fondly as I do.'- You fee, bright nymph,' (added the gentleman, without making an answer to Pharfamond's words) ' vou · fee, the infinite boldness which a certainty of being beloved by you, inspires this man with !-Infolent wretch! (cried Pharfamond, raifing his voice) either hold thy tongue, or referve thy o pride and fury for another place. If my arm s has not yet punish'd thee, thank the fair lady whom thou thus infultest, and whom I reverence from my foul.'- Thou punish me! (fays the e gentleman) I'll now force thee to break the bounds of a respect, which I am not oblig'd to observe so carefully as thou. Saying these words, he drew his fword, and was pushing forward in order to run Pharfamond through, who had just before perceiv'd, by the looks of his princess, that she was frighted at the imminent danger to which he was expos'd; whence Pharfamond, encourag'd by the regard the difcovered for his welfare, put himfelf in a pofture of defence, but with an air of intrepidity proportionable to the greatness of his passion. Our princefs, feeing the two heroes engaged, trembling for Pharfamond's life; or, perhaps, feized with the terror fo natural to her fex, had only time to feat herfelf on the grafs, where the fainted away. The champions fought with the utmost fury. But spite of the rage which vengeance infpires, the gentleman found Pharfamond to be His

f

W

in

ex

ba

superior,

fuperior, either in strength or activity. Had he but studied, as assiduously as Pharsamond, the histories of the most renowned knight-errants, this combat would have been much more noble, more obstinate, and more worthy the great soul of Pharsamond! By this time both were wounded, but Pharsamond, exasperated that an enemy who had insulted his princess, should make so brave a defence, slew at once at his sword, and seiz'd him by his hand; when presenting the point of his weapon to his opponent's throat, he forced him to give up his arms, with a promise to lay them at the feet of the lady whom he had offended; and to beseech her to implore Pharsamond to spare his life.

The ill-fated combatant promifed, and complied with every thing required by Pharfamond, from whom the blood trickled in two or three places, as it did from the body of his antagonist. The latter, asham'd and confounded, cross'd the whole garden, and mounted again his horse, firmly refolv'd to take a speedy and cruel revenge.

0

10

1-

nt

ce

il-

of-

di-

on.

ed,

ips,

oñ-

int-

noft

in

e His

rior,

With regard to Pharfamond, he stay'd with his princes; vex'd to the soul, that her seeble condition (she being still in a swoon) prevented his having the satisfaction of appearing bloody and wounded before her. As he was crying, with all the strength left him: —— 'You are reveng'd, sair angel; the blood of your enemy is now slowing, to revenge the injurious treatment you met with

from him.' The lady, at his pronouncing these words, half open'd her eyes, and vented a deep sigh. Pharsamond, at this very instant, was holding one of her snowy hands, which he kissed with extasy; the princess endeavouring to draw it back, but cou'd not.—'Do not take advantage (said she) in a seeble tone, of the sad state to which I am reduced.'—Pharsamond was prepar-

ing to pour forth a flood of tender sentiments, when he spied several servants, who having observed a gentleman returning back wounded, were come to inquire what was the matter. These servants were followed by Fatima, the princes's woman.

Cedalifa, (for so the lady was named) was just recovering from her swoon, when she perceiv'd her woman, towards whom she stretch'd forth her snowy arm; showing by this sign, that she want-

ted to be led to her chamber.

During this interval, a great quantity of blood had iffued from Pharfamond's wounds, which made him almost faint away. Poor Clito, his trufty squire, had waited for him, till now, at the little door of the garden. At last, the squire grew weary at this long attendance, it being late. The pleasure of setting out early that morning, in quest of adventures, had not given them leifure to fortify themselves against hunger, in case their expedition should prove of any length. The young fquire guess'd the hour of the day, by his appet te, much better than by the fun. He then entred the garden, in fearch of Pharfamond; fancying that weariness and heat, might very possibly, have invited him to indulge in flumbers. He struck down the very alley in which Pharfamond had walk'd at his first going in; when, casting his eyes on every fide, he at length, perceiv'd Cedalifa fitting in the posture of one greatly indispos d. So exquisite wa her beauty, that he did not doubt but this must be the charming object of whom Pharfamond was enamour'd. He likewise saw the servants in sad perplexity standing round her; and her woman, taking the fwooning fair by the arm, and leading her along. In a word, he perceiv'd Pharfamond all bloody, and holding his drawn fword. The

The young squire was an excellent domestick, and bore a true affection to his mafter. Clito then advanced towards the company, who feemed in so much confusion. Pharfamond, at the fight of his faithful Clito, flourish'd his sword with an intrepid air; and felt a fecret pleasure in seeing his squire find him in fuch a fituation, as must make him conclude, that his mafter had been engaged in some very confiderable adventure. - Gods ! (faid Clito, approaching the knight) what can all this mean? I saw you cover'd with blood, and a lady fainting away: who, my lord, can have done this? What will your good uncle fay, to fee you return in fo miserable a condition? I waited for you to very little purpose, at the garden door, with all the impatience of a man who has not broke his fast this day. You have been engaged in fine work, whilft I was absent from you. Ah! (good Sir) why did not you call to me for help. Curse on the morning in which we set out so very joyfully.

'Hold your peace,' (fays Pharfamond) hearing him mention the words belp and curfed; 'I have not wanted the affiftance of any man, and thou infultest me.' —— 'Ho! ho!' (reply'd the squire, seeing his zeal and regard so ill repaid) Why don't you run me thro', for exclaiming against the sad accident which has befallen you. Your pride must be greatly swell'd from this expedition of only half a day. Come, come, (my lord) mount your horse this instant; we perhaps shall find some surgeon, in the neighbouring village, who may dress your wounds. Your uncle must needs be very impatient to see you; and the old gentleman will not fail to rattle us off,

at our return.

e

ft

1-

i

18

e,

ha

nat

n-

wn

at

ery

the

wal

t be

en.

per-

nan,

ding

The

Whilst the squire was running on in this manner, the princess was carried off. Pharfamond was almost spent. He would gladly have followed Cedalifa, but had loft fo much blood, that he fell the first step he took. The princess, at this fight, vented a groan which might be almost term'd a cry; Cedalifa not being yet accustomed to figh after the heroine fashion. This was the most remarkable particular with regard to Cedalifa, but the over acted a little her part. Clito, feeing his mafter on the ground, did not show himself an experienced squire on that occasion. He advanced forward, with dreadful howlings; lamenting the anguish with which the uncle must necessarily be filled, the instant he should hear the sad accident which had befallen Pharfamond. The howlings of the squire, and his master's fall, affected the fervants. The princess, with an almost dying voice, bid them affift the courteous knight; put' him to bed, and fend for furgeons. - Heavens! (cried she) ill-fated knight! 'tis I shall' cause thy death.'-The reflection increased her illness, so that she again fainted away in the arms of those who supported her. How many faintings away! (will fome critick object,) one had' been sufficient. The first, it must be confess'd was natural, and the second was merely for form' fake. 'Twas one of these spontaneous swoonings,' which Cedalifa might think necessary, to give her adventure all the requifite formalities; and the chose to over-do her part, rather than fail in the most minute article.

First attempts are seldom successful; and perfons often by endeavouring to excel, by that means perform worse. To wave these reslections, some of the servants carried off Pharsamond; one holding him by the leg, another supporting his arm, and a third his head. The squire, weeping like a calf, sollow'd this mournful train, which was headed by the people going off with Cedalisa. Words cou'd never describe the sad solemnity of this march. 'Twas with difficulty they got to the top of the great stair-case of the mansion. Pharsamond was not a little jumbled; however he arrived safe in a very handsome bed-chamber. Our hero did not once move all the time he was undressing, he seeming as dead; but was at last put to bed. Before this, one of the servants had run in order to

fetch a furgeon.

d

1

,

r

e

C'

r-'

ns

ne'

d

m,

ind

In the mean time the squire, who was exposed the whole morning to the burning rays of the fun, and fasted so long, had thrown himself into an easy chair; where either through grief at his mafter's fad fall, or from emptinese, he found himself sick, and begg'd for a glass of wine. But the confusion they all were in, prevented any one's taking the least notice of his wants; so that now poor Clito began to grow pale and faint away. Things were in so lamentable a state, that it seemed as if a spell had been set this luckless day, on our two illfated adventurers. Those in the bed-chamber, not knowing how empty the fquire's belly was, were at a loss to guess whence such a train of unhappy accidents shou'd arise; and so universal was the furprize, that every individual was afraid of being taken ill. Heavens! (fays one) where will this end? We shall all swoon away one after another. The fear of this, made above half of those present slink off, for fear of the infection. Cedalifa had now been some time in bed, when she fent, every monent, to enquire after Pharfamond. During that interval, the furgeon came. He was a good fort of a man enough, between the tradefman and the clown; and pretty well skill'd in his natural natural trade, (that of a Barber) but then he had a heavy hand, and us'd his instruments clumfily. He now went up to the patient, whose wounds he furvey'd with fuch an air, and fo deep a filence, as feemed to prognofficate death. At last, opening his lips, he spoke as follows. This unhappy gentleman is really extremely ill; however, I shall be able to recover him. Though I live in the country, I yet wou'd have the world know, that I am as dextrous as a town furgeon. Be therefore easy (good Sir) in fix weeks, at farthest, vou'll be as well as you cou'd wish.'--- 'In fix weeks! (cried the fervants) we shall be finely off indeed; what a bleffed time must we have of it !---Will it not be possible for you, replied the luckless knight, who by this time had recovered his spirits, ' to set me to rights sooner!' - 'Bodlikins! (replied the Barber) cures don't go on as quick as the post-boy; and wounds like these, are much sooner made than they are heal'd. Repose yourself, and have patience. Much time will be requir'd; and I know its measure, as well as I do that of my porringers.' Saying these words, he wip'd the patients wounds, prob'd them; and all this in fo rough and aukward a manner, as forc'd poor Pharfamond to roar out every moment. The fquire, had he been able, would have fquall'd as luftily; whilst the rest listed up from time to time their shoulders, in token of compassion. At last the furgeon having done his work, the knight was put to bed again. And now the company turn'd about to Clito, who was still in a fwoon, and had had almost a pail of cold water thrown over his face. Though his clothes were quite dripping, yet could not this inundation recal his fleeting fenses. The furgeon laid his nand on his forehead, and felt his

pulse;

pulse; when finding him almost motionless, he shook his head, and cried, 'The poor fellow's vaftly ill.'-We have faid fo this quarter of an hour, replied the fervants .- Bring a little wine ' (added the Barber) 'tis of all liquors the most fovereign, for restoring the tongue to its wonted play.'--Immediately a fervant drawing a huge bottle of wine, they forc'd open the fick fquire's mouth, and pour'd a flood down his throat. The generous liquor took effect immediately, the haples Clito beginning now to move and cough. Pour on, my lads,' (faid the Barber) at which words they forc'd down another pint; and, at last, fo great a quantity, that the fquire open'd his eyes; when fpying the veffel of nectar, and fnatching it out of the hands of him who held it, he put the neck into his mouth; and without the least help lifted up his arm fo high, and fo long, that he quite emptied the bottle. By my troth (fays Clito) I'm now a thousand times better. I stood in great need of this cordial; and should I be ill after this, 'twill not be owing to weakness.'-The Barber and the fervants were all amaz'd, to fee him recover his spirits so suddenly.—Faith and troth (faid one of them) if all who were to fwoon away, shou'd require as much wine as this fellow, to recover them; there wou'd not be half enough to ferve the rest of the world till the next vintage. - My good friend, this belly of your's must be a tun. -- 'Pugh (says the squire) instead of this harangue on my quaffing, run and fetch me some victuals. Did your stomachs gnaw like mine, you wou'd not be fo fond of prating." On my foul!' (faid one of the domesticks) ' you have guzzled fo heartily, that you may well want fomething to eat; but if your hunger is as violent as your thirst, we'll e'en lay all the C 3 ' turkies

2

0

.

,

5

ır

ne

ut

ut 1-

e.

ld

ne.

nis:

65

turkies in the yard to the fire.'——But now a maid-fervant went into the kitchen, faying to Clito, 'follow me; you must have recover'd your legs by this time.'——'I'll attend you with all my heart,' (replied the squire) saying which he rose, and went after the girl.——The reader will take it for granted, that Clito play'd his part in the pantry; and eat, with as noble a vigour as he had before tippled.

And now every one was retired from Pharfamond's chamber, when his wounds, and his great effusion of blood, very much weaken'd his romantick ideas. Speculative knowledge is of little

use, except it be join'd with long practice.

He mus'd, for some time, upon himself, on his uncle, and on his princess; but all this in a very different manner from what he had done the former part of the day. Things began now to appear to him in their genuine colours; on which occasion, either vexed to find himself in some meafure undeceiv'd; or, being quite spent, he sell

afleep.

The princess was also ruminating, as she lay in her bed, on all that had passed; and sondly slatter'd herself, from the very opening of this adventure, with so noble a continuation, as would surpass, in beauty and in incidents, all those with which her imagination was fill'd. Her first reslection was, to admire at the manner in which she became acquainted with Pharsamond; after which she proceeded to their second interview. The combat between the knight, with the gentleman who came and disturb'd them, at the very nick of time when she (perhaps) was going to whisper thus,—— That he need not despair, —— increas'd her admiration also; and gave rise to a numberless multitude

multitude of thoughts. At last, the result of them, was, that this knight must doubtless be the man, whom heaven had ordain'd to be her husband; and consequently that he alone wou'd be

worthy of touching her heart.

is

y

r-

)-

h

aell

in

it-

d-

ıld

ith

ec-

he

ich

he

an

cof

us,

as'd

les

ude

The reader may conclude, from this specimen, that our young lady's brain was still more disordered than that of Pharfamond. Though it must be own'd that his was bewilder'd enough. Both were very deep read in romance; but then a woman's imagination, in studies of this kind (be this faid without offending the fair fex) makes a much fwifter progress than that of the men, and is infinitely fooner engross'd by them; so that our young lady had very near attain'd all the qualifications which speak the romantick heroine. I shall omit the various things that passed in this house during several The Barber came very diligently, night and morning, to dress Pharsamond's wounds; and the princess sent regularly every hour, to enquire after the knight's health, by a waiting-woman, the worthy companion of her illustrious lady. This mistress Abigail flatter'd herself, that when her lady should have fix'd upon her paramour, the squire of this fortunate lover, wou'd necessarily merit her whole attention. And, though the flame which they should feel one for the other, might be of a subaltern kind; she yet hop'd to love, and be beloved, in fuch a manner, as wou'd be altogether different from a vulgar passion. Add to this, that the would thare in all her miftress's adventures; shou'd be her confidant, and sometimes the happy reconciler of fuch differences as might arise between them, either from the too great warmth of the knight, the pride of her lady, or fome other motive, the cause of which must be a refin'd jealousy. Such were the hopes with which this

this woman fed herfelf; a proof that her mind was of a turn not very different from that of the heroine whom she served.

With regard to Pharsamond's squire, he was afraid of going back to the uncle, for sear of a beating. That old gentleman was pretty hasty in his temper; fond of regularity; and our young ramblers had acted very wrong, in setting out merely on a whim, and without once hinting their design to him; for all which reasons Clito had resolv'd within himself to stay at Cedalisa's, till such time as his master should be perfectly recover'd. Pharsamond, who had not yet been visited by Cedalisa, did not know to what to ascribe this reserve; but the reslections he made, on that occasion, were succeeded by others far more grievous.

The uneafiness which Pharsamond's absence must necessarily give his uncle, tormented him excessively. He therefore intreated Clito to go and inform the old gentleman, that he was well; but the squire did not scruple to declare, that 'twould be with infinite reluctance he should set out on such an errand; and this reluctance arose from the dread he was under, of being cudgell'd almost to death, should it be known that his master had fought, and was wounded. Pharfamond, being of opinion that Clito's arguments were folid, did not care to urge him farther. It has been already observ'd, that this adventure had greatly diminished the strength of his romantic ideas. Hence our knight would gladly have got well, in order to be able to return home; but he was fallen into too kind hands, for him to have opportunity, or leifure fufficient to advance in his conversion.

Bould

(1 ml 3 m '

In the mean time, the frequent messages carried by Fatima, Cedalisa's waiting woman, had already formed an acquaintance between her and Clito. They used to chat together pretty often, and Fatima was a good agreeable girl. Clito, though not handsome, was a stout inviting fellow. He used frequently to dart amorous glances at her, which often give rise to a reciprocal slame. Nevertheless, the girl, for the first six or seven days, pretended not to take any notice of them. Fatima made no other reply to these amorous oglings, than by assuming a modest air, composed of pride and seriousness; she being resolved to shape her behaviour towards Clito, exactly on the model of that of her mistress with regard to Pharsamond.

But now Clito, the remembrance of whose illfated late adventure, good cheer, and the fight of Fatima's charms had banished, gave himself up entirely to his passion. He attempted one day, as he was rifing from table, and when his copious draughts had made him break those bounds he before promised not to pass; he attempted (I say) as he fat near Fatima, to thrust his hand carelesty down her bosom, the delicious aspect of which prompted him to transgress a little the bounds of decency. Fatima, offended at his boldness, hurried away; giving him to understand, that this kind of love did no ways fuit her. The feverity of the glance the darted at Clito, waked him from his amorous transport; made him call to mind what he himself was, as well as the person with whom he took fuch liberties.

A day or two after the abovementioned incident, Cedalifa, hearing that Pharfamond was on the mending hand, fent a message by Fatima, declaring that she would pay him a visit; she being of opinion, that, between lovers of their rank,

e

0

the laws of decorum required this. Pharfamond,

the moment the message was delivered, sound all those wild notions, which before were taking their slight, revive again. He was going to receive a visit, from his mistress, at his bed-side; he had been wounded, and for her sake. This situation seemed to him complete in all it's circumstances; and persectly resembling those of a thousand other heroic lovers.

Cedalisa came in the afternoon, agreeably to her promise, attended by Fatima. She was in the engaging dishabille, that adds so many graces to a lovely woman; and which, so far from calling off the eyes, by superstuous ornaments, leaves them at full liberty to contemplate on nothing but the fair-one's person, to admire such of her charms as dress has left uncovered; whilst that the imagination sigures to itself those concealed, as inexpressibly beautiful; and that the heart now became sensible to the impression, melts, sires, and is insatiable in it's wishes.

The instant Cedalisa entered, she cast such a look on our knight, as shewed that the sight of him pleased her. Pharsamond, on the other hand, thought it incumbent on him to pay so auspicious a glance, by gazing at her with an air of tenderness, which plainly shewed that he was inchanted with her presence. Cedalisa seated herself in an easy chair, standing at the bed's head; when Fatima

and Clito retired out of respect.

'I am exceedingly forry,' (faid Cedalifa, who began the conversation) 'for the accident which 'has reduced you to so deplorable a state. 'Tis not but I know that 'tis customary for heroes,

formed with fouls great as your's, to revenge ladies, and combat for their fakes; but then I

could have wish'd, during the terror with which I was seized, to see you in such imminent dan-

ger, that your victory had been easier; and that

your opponent had been less formidable, and thereby less worthy of your noble rage, and the

e mighty blows you dealt him.'

Pharasmond, in spite of his extravagance, was surprized to hear a compliment so happily copied from romances; but his surprize only heightened his esteem for the enchanting Cedalisa.

The danger (said our knight) I was in, for your sake, does no way merit the notice you are pleased to take of it. Such was the justice of my cause, that your enemy could not possibly escape the punishment due to him; and the most formidable rivals could never have withstood a man who had the noble confidence to love you; to make a declaration of his passion; and to revenge a mighty insult put upon you. But may I (inchanting creature!) presume, not by way of reward for the action atchieved by me, but merely as a recompense for my zeal, to enquire who is the peerless lady, for whose sake I en-

' gag'd in this combat.'

0

15

s,

1

h

1-

at

'The service you have done me, replied Cedalisa, and the generous contempt you show for
life, to revenge my honour, will not permit me
to refuse complying with your request. But
then I am equally impatient, to be inform'd who
it is I am oblig'd to for so many marks of his zeal,
as you are to know who I am.'—'I have been
already too much honour'd, replied Pharsamond,
by your curiosity; and would have gratisted it
sooner, had I imagin'd that any could have been

excited in you on my account.

Pharfamond, after this modest introduction, gave her an ample detail of his whole life, in such expressions as set it in the most august light, and very happily supplied the place of deeds. He told her the several books he had read, and the mighty impressions they had made on him; the strong

strong aversion he bore to all such young ladies as had been proposed to him in marriage; and his custom of retiring to woods and lonely forests. there to meditate. Pharfamond even raifed two or three infignificant incidents he had met with, to the dignity of heroic adventures: he mention'd his uncle, but conceal'd his uneafinefs, for his not having fent word of what was become of poor Pharfamond. He acquainted Cedalifa with the manner of his fallying forth; and was particularly careful not to omit the whimfical or amorous refpect he still retain'd, for the places in which he had met with her. He related, at full length, the discourse made by him to his dear princess, (for fuch he stiled her during his whole harangue;) and the gentleman whom he follow'd, was not forgot. In a word, he gave a most distinct account of the manner in which he had past his time, till the auspicious moment when he perceived her at a distance, with a book in her hand,

Cedalisa was inchanted with this relation, so that she considered her meeting with our hero, as a treasure which fortune had thrown in her way. She assured him, that she could not but admire in the highest degree, these noble beginnings of his life; adding a thousand more noble particulars, all which I omit, for the sake of digressing to a couple of lower lovers, who during the conversation of their superiors, made the best use possible of

their time.

Fatima did not look at our squire at first, she still remembering how grossly he had affronted her. Clito, who had read a thousand reconciliations, and those of the most tender kind, resected, for some time, in what manner he should bring about his own. At last, breaking suddenly from his silence, he spoke thus; — 'May not I (lovely Fatima) hope to be pardoned for the offence

fence I fo rashly committed; and will you not fosten your severity, with regard to poor Clito? -faying these words, he seized one of Fatima's hands. As the vehemence with which he spake, bereaved him of his presence of mind, he squeez'd her hand fo hard, that Fatima, finding her fingers hurt, was forced to be ferious, and to fquawl out. - The squire blush'd at this second blunder. and would gladly by dint of kiffes, have made Fatima forget her pain; but she, fearing, perhaps, he would bite her, extricated herfelf as speedily as possible from that danger, faying; - ' I thought wou had more sense; and imagined, that as your master was so finish'd a gentleman, you could onot be a clown; but I was mistaken, and am forry for it.'- I have very little to boaft of, res plied Clito; but, lovely Fatima, no man living ever strove more ardently than I have done, to s acquire fome little merit; and I will take upon me to declare, that if you would but condefcend to love me, you perhaps may not find me unworthy of your regard.' - Are you acquainted (faid Fatima) with the nature of a gee nerous passion? you doubtless fancy, that the love you may have entertained for one of our country lasses, is able to satisfy a heart which is ono ways of the vulgar cast; but I befeech you not to harbour any fuch notion; the confidant of a lady, like to her whom I have the honour of ferving, contemns fuch trivial paffions, and 'thinks'em infinitely beneath her.'- 'How great-' ly do you charm me, (replied Clito) with these words! you are a living book, and the very thing I wanted. Our tempers are alike; and would you but give me your heart, I should flight a crown in comparison of it. I have read the several instructions necessary. I am perfectly well

d

1-

t-

d

ly I well acquainted with all the impulses which two hearts, such as ours ought to feel. You may

fee (lovely Fatima) in my bed-chamber, a great

pile of books, to prove the truth of what I now

fay. My master and I were brought up in the fame school; and had providence sent me into

the world a gentleman's fon, I perhaps might

have been a better man than he.'

Clito now exalted his voice to fo high a pitch. that Pharfamond and Cedalifa could fcarce hear one another; and they were forced to bawl very loud, in order to be understood. The knight vented a deep figh, to which the fquire eccho'd: the lady and her maid squawl'd, whereby a din arose, as roused an old maid-fervant of the house; and who, with her spectacles on her nose, was conning over her prayer-book on the stair-case. This old crone came and opened the chamber-door. The fight of her instantly check'd the impetuofity of our four lovers. Cedalifa was vexed to the foul at this unexpected intrusion. In a well-regulated mansion, like to those read of in romances, 'tis not usual for an indifcreet old woman, with her spectacles on, to burft fo rudely into a chamber, where a wounded knight is lying in bed.

Why all this uproar?' (bawl'd the old woman, taking off her spectacles) I imagin'd, young mistress, that you was dancing in this room; you'll split the head of this poor sick gentleman, who must be in great want of rest.' — The uncommon familiarity of these words, would have roused Pharsamond a second time, had the enemy been worthy of his notice. He now darted such a look at Cedalisa, as denoted his surprize, to see so low a creature, force in so audaciously; a creature, who should not only be forbid the bedchamber, but every part of the mansion. But

his

his surprize was greatly increased, when Fatima, raising her voice, said to the old woman; — 'Go back to your kitchen, Dame Margaret, and mind your own business.' — 'Ho! ho!' (said the old woman, in a passion, to Fatima) 'you are grown not a little proud! but this is not the first time you have given yourself airs as though you were my mistress! but I'll have you to know, (Mrs. Minx) that I came to this house long before you; that you are a saucy little baggage; and that my lady will make you change your note, the moment she returns home.'

At these words, which seemed the prelude to a mighty quarrel, Cedalifa turned towards Pharfamond, and spoke thus: - ' Courteous knight, I am quite grieved, that the impertinence of this old creature should interrupt our delightful conversation, but I intreat you not to mind it.' -Pharfamond could not forbear fmiling, but made no reply. Cedalisa went forward, in order to turn out the old woman, against whom Fatima was inveighing, exasperated at the words faucy baggage. The old woman, with her fifts clench'd, and holding her fides, made the best defence she could with her hoarse pipe; and rolled her red faucer eyes, strongly expressive of her rage. -'You insolent, old hag!' (fays Fatima, joining in the quarrel) ' was it not out of respect to my good young lady, I would teach you better ' manners.' - ' How !' (Judith) replied the old woman, 'I have trod the ground thefe threefcore ' Years, eighteen of which I know you to be a ' little fool.' - But now Clito, fired with a noble refentment, would take Fatima's part; and told Dame Margaret, that if the did not march off that moment, he would turn her out head and shoulders .- ' Marry come up! says she, it indeed be-

;

1-

re

y

h

ee

a-

d-

ut

his

611311 *

comes you (Mr. Skip) to talk thus to me. "Tis you ought to go out; and, should I call up old Iohn, he'll fend you down the stairs on all fours.' - Clito was fired at the word Skip; when, forgetting that he was not at home, as well as what he had read in books, viz. that a man fhould defpife a woman's anger, he feized the old hag by the arm, with an intention to force her out of the room. But now Dame Margaret flew at his neckcloth, and holding him by it, gave him many cuffs on the face with her fift clench'd. - Persons are indued with uncommon strength when in their own houses. In the mean time Clito was dragging along the old woman, who vented ten thousand imprecations against both the waiting-maid and the young lady. Cedalifa also played her part, so that there was a most horrid din. Pharsamond would gladly have got up, in order to put an end to the fray; but all he could do, was to bawl as loud as possible. — During this interval, in came John, Dame Margaret's husband, when, seeing his wife abused in this manner, he rushed among the combatans; and flew to Clito, whom he kicked backwards, with the utmost fury. Nothing was now heard, but cries and oaths. The battle growing fill warmer, cravats and women's caps flew about, and nothing was feen but fcratching and clawing. The storm grew so violent, that some sad accident would, in all probability, have happened; had not seven or eight Peasants, of both sexes, run in at hearing the noise. Each of these was inclined to fide with one or other of the parties; but the wifest amongst them pacified matters, and separated the combatants. Old John, Dame Margaret, and the rest withdrew. Cedalisa, Fatima, and Clito went to their respective seats; but first shut the the same of the chambers derated blasty come up they are in inspection

chamber-door, with a firm resolution not to open

it to any one.

And now the conversation was renewed between Pharsamond and Cedalisa. Clito went on chatting with Fatima; and hinted slily at the great warmth with which he had espoused her quarrel. Fatima no longer called to mind the infults she had met with from the old crone, she only blaming hersels for her ill-timed resentment. Clito did all he could to comfort her; and this with so much success, that he at last prevailed upon her to permit his addresses.

During this interval, Pharfamond, who had given Cedalisa a full account of his whole life, intreated her to savour him with her story. The lady answered, 'That it was time for her to go, 'she having made him a long visit; and that the accident which had happened just before, russled her so much, that she was not able to inform him of a single particular; that there were a great number of important circumstances in her history, and that he should be made acquainted with every

thing on the morrow.'

Pharfamond pressed her no farther, imagining that good manners required this. However, he listed, as she was rising, one of his hands out of bed, when snatching her arm, and kissing it.—
Forget not, dear lady, (says he) the promise you have been so gracious as to make me. Deign not to forbid my cherishing sentiments, which I must treasure up, eternally, in my heart.'—Adieu, courteous knight,' (replied Cedalisa as she withdrew) 'I will no longer oppose those sentiments, since it is not in your power to banish them; however make not a bad use of an indulgence which I, possibly, may have been imprudent in granting.'—Saying these words, she went away. Fatima, who

began insensibly to take a liking to Clito, followed her mistress; leaving the squire with such an air, as shewed that she would not be displeased at seeing

him again.

Cedalifa was scarce come out of Pharsamond's apartment, when her mother returned home; she having been to a samous city, there to carry on a law-suit of consequence. She was not expected till six weeks after, but the suit had come on sooner than had been imagined. Her sudden arrival, greatly vexed and surprised Cedalisa, who, during the old lady's absence, had been blessed with a liberty she would gladly have enjoyed longer.

The mother was returned a moment after the combats between Dame Margaret and Fatima, Clito and John. The instant the old hag saw her mistress:—— 'Welcome! welcome!' says she, madam, (anger sparkling in her eyes) 'Here are 'most abominable doings! our house is turned

quite topfy turvy!'

The lady of the house, who was not a little choleric in her temper, enquired into all that had past; was told the whole quarrel; the adventure of the garden; Pharsamond's combat; his being wounded, and carried into the house, where he then lay. In a word, she was informed of every particular, not excepting Cedalisa's

fainting.

She knew but too well her daughter's frenzy; and for that reason, had exerted her utmost endeavours in order to destroy the whimsies with which her head was filled. She had thrown a thousand romances out of the window; but Cedalisa had always found the secret to supply their places with others. The mother now ran up stairs in a violent passion, in order to be an eye-witness to what was passing; and appeared just

Just as Cedalisa was leaving Pharsamond's room. The door was not yet shut, when she perceived the knight lying along, with the squire at his bed's head. She entered without speaking a word to her daughter, but darted an angry glance at her. Cedalisa, who stood in great awe of her mother, was quite disconcerted; so that she ran swift as a greyhound, and shut herself up in her apartment.

3

e

2

d

-

0.

ed ed

10

a,

er

e,

re

ed

tle

d-

t;

le,

na's

y ;

n-

ith

a le-

ply

ran

an red

Clito, feeing the old lady come into the room with so resolute an air, not knowing who she was, cried: -- ' have we got another Dame Margaret here? who is it you want, old lady? (continued he.) - The lady answered this question but too forcibly; she advancing forwards, and giving him a flout box on the ear. -Infolent fellow! (added she) what right have your vagrant master and you to come and lodge in my house? to visit my daughter with whom you have no manner of acquaintance? and to beat my servants? get out (both of you) and exasperate me no farther.' -- 'Tis a shame (cried Pharfamond, raifing himself in the bed) that a gentleman, and a stranger, should be exposed to the brutality of a rude woman. whomfoever you may be, who call us infolent fellows (for I have too much reverence for Cedalifa, to imagine you can possibly be her mother) I despise you so heartily, that I will not condescend to inform you of the adventure which brought me to this place; and if I leave the house this instant, 'tis not from any apprehenfions I am under, of being farther infulted by you, but to preserve my eyes from the fight of fo shocking an object.' -- Saying these words he caused Clito to dress him; the squire whispered thus in his ear: - This lady

must certainly be Cedalisa's mother, her aunt.

or fuch like; for your princess fled away with

all imaginable speed, the instant she saw her. Let

us, dear Sir, get out as fast as possible. There will be no holding out the fortress any longer.

· Indeed, my good ford, I don't like this old wo-

· man's face.

As Pharfamond was putting on his cloaths, the mother called the fervants; and spoke with so much authority, as feemed to prove her the miftress of the house. She then ordered two or three of them to stay in the bed-chamber; and to force Pharfamond thence, in case he should take it into his head to continue any longer.

Pharfamond, who was now girding on his fword, drew it from the scabbard, flopping his hat at the same time. -- ' Weak as I am, (faid

he) this blade of mine shall hew down any one, who might have the infolence to approach me.

- Clito then unsheathing his old rusty sabre; ---With this, (fays he) I'll cut off the ears of that

hideous beldam, Margaret, should the old devil

come in my way."

Pharfamond was now quite dreffed, when leaning on Clito's shoulder, and sourishing his drawn fword, he passed by the old lady, and the

fervants, who were drawn up in two lines.

No people ever left a house with less noise or confusion. Clito saddled their horses, when, mounting the knight on the one, and himfelf leaping on the other, they both fet out flowly, with the deepest filence. 'Twas not interrupted by any person, and the doors were immediately thut upon them. Thus did these glimmerings of felicity, which had flattered fo deliciously Pharfamond, instantly take their flight. Such was the fuccess of his first adventure. He might justly boast, that no hero had ever met with the like. Our

Our ramblers rode towards the village, without uttering a fingle word all the way, and got home

at the close of evening.

e 0

13

at

id e,

at vil

en nis he

or

en,

elf ly,

red

ely

of

fa-

the Aly ke. Dur

We will now leave Cedalifa, exposed to her mother's wrath, and relate what befel Pharfamond, when he returned to his uncle. The old gentleman had fent every where to enquire after him, but without fuccess; so that though the young man had been absent only a few days, he yet thought him as completely loft, as if he had been many years from home.

there is a med but their but to the add abund t

harries with a merculi ting horard

at the survey we to the state of the survey of the

from the first of the first point of the hard per consisting of the constitution of the constitu

Coder of monathing guinardician.

The End o the first PART.

O box Grom short was a s

er of ile balance from the section of the section o

IT I THE COUNTY OF THE STATE OF THE STATE OF

recognition as a second transfer of the second of the seco

colores per serve sel ou such the way

the same was not been the comment of the beauty

aurillaudi, dock na togenera decel field ist skip -arm factor from a la competation de l

PHAR-



PHARSAMOND.

PART II.

S O M E neighbouring gentlemen, to whose houses the afflicted old man had sent, in order to enquire about his nephew, were come to the uncle's upon their hearing of Pharsamond's flight. The description given them of it, was accompanied with so many inauspicious circumstances, that the compassionate neighbours, all with tears in their eyes, shrugged up their shoulders, as fearing that some lamentable accident must certainly have befallen the young man: and though they sat round a well surnished table, yet so violent was their affliction, not one of them could eat a morsel.

Such was the fituation of the uncle, and his whole company, when Pharfamond and Clito arrived at the gate. Pharfamond, who, as was observed before, had not uttered a word all the way, did not break his filence till he got into the court-yard. The conversation he had enjoyed with the idol of his soul, before he set out; the coming in of her mother, whom he took for a woman appointed to guard princes Cedalisa; and whom he imagined must have been exposed, by this time, to the insolent love of some bold prince; these several particular

Sir-

culars had so greatly disturbed his mind, that he did not so much as remember his having an uncle. He even was passing by the house; but Clito, who had been restored to his senses by the box o' the ear, which Cedalisa's mother had bestowed upon him; and the infamous manner in which they had been driven away, stopped him.—

Speak, speak, (says he) my good lord Pharsamond; whither are you rambling? do you sans cy that this house belongs to the old woman from whom we parted in so very honourable a manner? Go in: We are not threatened with being turned out of doors here; tho' I am assaid we shan't be very well received?

se !

1-

to

l's

IC-

ith

ers,

er-

ugh

ent

it a

his arri-

rved

rard.

ol of her

ed to gined

info-

parti-

culas

we shan't be very well received. ' Leave me, and go thou in,' (replied Pharfamond, with the tone of a penfive knight, whose foul is become a prey to the most gloomy thoughts) thou wilt find me to-morrow, by day break, in this forest,' (for there was one near the house.) - 'What in God's name,' (fays the fquire, in the utmost surprize) 'can all this mean? Are you (my dear mafter) bewitched? how! fpend the live long night in a lonely forest, to be there devoured by wolves, even to your very bones? Go in for God's fake (good my lord) to your dear uncle's. Hark! the jack is turning round: remember that, should you proceed to the wood, you would not get a bit of supper.' Heavens! (cried the knight) what's all this thou art talking about? my princess flands in need of my aid. I myfelf was infolently treated by the old woman whose prisoner she is. I must be a wretch indeed, and the most insensible of mortals, should I as matters stand, suffer any other care to ingroß me, than that of rescuing my charmer out of the hands of her enemies. Go thy ways, Clito, thou hast my permission for this, and leave me alone,'--- Do you know,

Sir,' (replied Clito, holding Pharfamond's horse by the bridle;) ' do you know that I take you to be very fick? One would swear that your brain was turned: should you go forward, an hundred to one but you may die on horseback, in the midst of frightful solitudes. Let's enter in here, (Sir,) our bellies are quite empty, and we shall find ourselves infinitely better after eating a good meal.' --- 'Once again (replied Pharfamond) leave me: wretches, fuch as I, have too little relish for life, to wish to prolong it. My foul is wholly ingroffed by my paffion, and I am far removed from my princess. Ah! my good Clito; after the indulgence she has fhown me, after the dangers to which that very indulgence must certainly have exposed her, (and all this for my fake,) would'ft thou · advise me to think of repose? Is it not my duty to be all languishment and despair?'--Good my lord, (replied Clito) you'll languish much more fafely in a bed-chamber, than in a forest, where there will not be one foul to pity you. - Once again, Clito, (replied our knight) leave me. — Be resolved, and either go or flay.'-- 'But, good Sir, (continued Clito, in a doleful tone) be so gracious as to deprive yourfelf of the rapturous pleasure of lying at the foot of a tree, with no other canopy than the fky, in compassion to the haples Clito, who, fpite of the honour he has to be your fquire, may yet, very probably, be foon foundly cudgelled by your uncle. Were I to go home without you, what answer could I make him, when he should ask what is become of you? how will he chafe, when I talk to him of your f princess and mine? and, to say the truth, he'll have just reason to be angry with you; for your princess (I must out with it) is a little coquet, who

who does not deserve that so much blood, as would fill a nut fhell, should be spilt for her sake. take her (fay I) and her waiting-maid also: are both as blind as beetles, to fancy either of them handsome. Believe me, Sir, there are " much fewer princesses, in this age, than fore merly; they are rarely met with at this time, ' and the world is quite changed. We now have only dutchesses, countesses, and gentlemen; and though you should swear, till you are black in the face, that you are a knight, and I your ' squire; you yourself would be no more than plain Peter Trumpington, nephew to John 'Trumpington, lord of Pimlico; and I only · Colin Hobby, fon to Andrew Hobby, your most ' submissive valet de chambre, and somewhat re-· lated to you (if fame fays true) by your father. Let us therefore (dear Sir) enter our house at once, and think no more of our late shocking ' adventure. Had the heroes of our romances " met with the like, 'tis my opinion that they ' would not have been very fond of knight-er-' rantry.'

Pharfamond, now wrapt in deep contemplation, did not make the least reply to all these fine words. - 'How! (fays Clito) won't you flir? Won't you have the least attention to the maony excellent things I have faid to you? and yet. I will be so bold as to say, that our parson could not have preached a better fermon.'-'Twas to no purpose that Clito exerted all the power of his eloquence, to force Pharfamond to speak; for not a syllable would the latter utter. He was no longer his own mafter; the pleasure of passing the night in a solitary forest; the title of knight to which he fancied he had an undoubted claim; the adventure that had befallen his princess; his combat; the fatal manner in which VOL . I.

r

n

e

t

n

0,

e,

d-

ne

n,

W

ur

11

ur

et,

ho

her mother had turned him out of the house: all those particulars presented themselves at once to his heated imagination; and appeared to him as fo many important adventures, exactly fuited to the profession o a knight-errant. On an occasion, those whom he considered as his models would have been pensive and lost in thought; and Pharfamond became so absent in this respect, that he both forgot poor Clito and his uncle, and the manfion vanished from his eyes. At last Clito, tired with the knight's obstinate silence, pulled him by the fleeve; but Pharfamond, the happy imitator of his illustrious Originals, could not admit such an ill-placed infenfibility, as would violate the laws of a contemplation, deep as that was, in which he was then involved. Clito pulled him a fecond time, still more forcibly, by the sleeve, but to no purpose. And now our haples squire, (on whom the terror of the expected drubbing, in case he should go in without his master, acted perhaps as strongly as the love he bore him) began to be quite outrageous. He bestowed a thousand imprecations on all romances; declared that the heroes of them all deserved the gallows; and losing all reverence for princesses and their confidants, he called them, in his rage, a parcel of impertinent vagrants, whose necks deserved to be twisted With regard to romance-writers, he befought heaven to extirpate their whole race. With what pleasure (added he) could I put them to prefs, and fqueeze them as hard as ever their books have been! 'My dear master,' (cried he, efter excommunicating even to the very ink) ' for heaven's fake return to your fenses! you have be-

flowed on me many marks of your friendship;

be not therefore so hard-hearted, as to abandon

[&]quot; me at this melancholy juncture."

In this manner Clito conjured his frantic mafter to go into the house, yet his plaintive voice could not once pierce his ears. Pharfamond, deaf to his cries, calmly enjoyed the luxury of contemplation; not knowing that his luckless squire, must answer, at the expence of his shoulders, for a conduct, which neither all the princesses in the world, nor the profession of knighthood, could fave from the reproach of a whimfical uncle, who had loft all manner of regard both to love and valour. Clito would parhaps have died away with grief and fear, had not Pharfamond's deep filence, and his fixed countenance, fuggested a most happy expedient. The fquire now resolved to take the penfive knight's horse by the bridle, and drag him infensibly into the court-yard. Pharfamond, fpite of the horse's motion, continued as much wrapt in thought as ever; but scarce were the hero and his fleed got into the yard, but the hurry and tumult of Pharfamond's disturbed imagination, forced him to exhale, aloud, part of his thoughts in manner following: -- ' Lovely oprincess! alas! to what dangers did I leave you exposed! you perhaps may now be tyrannized over by the odious and barbarous prince, whose captive you are! you possibly may be obnoxious to infults from which you have every thing to dread! I hear your plaintive voice, fondly ' imploring my aid. Alas! the number of my enemies has forced my courage, to submit; the gods themselves, the gods, the never-failing protectors of injured innocence, feem to have forfaken us. I fought; my arm hurled instant death, but this arm was not victorious: fatal gates opposed my passage; I saw you (inchanting fair-one!) disappear with the cruel wretches who forced you away. Gods! either D 2

d

-

th

to

ir

e,

or

e-

9;

on

take my life or restore to me the adorable Ceda-

After these words, which Pharfamond pronounced in a hoarse tone, he held his peace. But the transport with which he was agitated, had given so much strength to his voice, that all the melancholy company, then in the parlour, were moved by it; when the uncle starting up, ran forward, with a candle in his hand, and was followed by all his guests. Clito, when the light appeared, discovered his master, at which he trembled and grew pale. He then would have advanced, but was not able. All he could do. was to take, with a shivering hand, his hat from his head, when the uncle and the servants knew him. -- 'Strange!' (cried Pharfamond's nurfe) have I lost my eye-fight! Methinks I see Colin with our young squire. Well, Heavens be praifed!' (continued the good dame, quite in raptures) 'Worthless things are found sooner or later; behold them started up before us, like a couple of mushrooms."

To all this Pharfamond, whose hands lay cross his breaft, did not make the least answer. His eves were either shut, or turned towards the skies; and he doubtless fancied himself at the foot of a tree, there deploring, in the most delicious manner, his sad fate. But now our modern squire emboldened by the nurse's jokes, advanced to pay his obeifance to the company; when every fervant went and felt about the fquire's head and arms, to know if he was the individual Colin .-O! here he is, (cried they in extafy,) 'not a fingle hair of his head is loft.' -- Thefe words were followed by embraces. - Welcome! thrice welcome! (cried they all) but we did not really expect you.'-The uncle putting a stop to these caresses, asked Colin,

what

what his nephew was doing on horseback. 'Has he lost (added he) the use of his tongue fince you left my house?' Upon this, running up to him: -- ' Ho! ho! nephew, (adds he) what ' is all this? Why you are as fierce as a trooe per, what means this posture?'-Pharsamond, hearing these words which were pronounced with an air of familiarity, recovered himself; but then, difgusted at the manner in which he was addressed by the old gentleman, from whom he expected a reception much more fuitable to his supposed dignity. - 'My lord,' (says our knight, in a most folemn tone) 'Pharsamond' has motives of grief to which you are an utter 'sfranger; and, were you to be informed of them, you would not enquire into the cause of 'his filence,' - You are still half a sleep, ' (my dear boy, replied the uncle, justly surprized at the melancholy tone with which his nephew uttered these words) ' there are no lords in my house; I am thy uncle, or in other words, 'Squire Trumpington of Pimlico; and all the Persons thou feeft here, are good gentlemen, and thy fincere friends. Alight, alight, I fay; get thee to bed, and there finish thy dream; for thou feemest, to me, to want sleep more than victu-'als.'—Heavens! (cried Pharfamond) I sleep! (my lord) alas! my misfortunes are too great, and my forrows too just, for me ever to feek reopose!'-- Zounds! (cries the uncle) spare 'your titles, don't call me, my lord, but give me my true name.'

Upon this the gentlemen, and all the fervants, furrounded confusedly, our knight. 'Ah! young 'Mr. Trumpington,' (said one of the company) 'we have been prodigiously uneasy about you. 'Where, in God's name, have you been! And are you returned, (my dear child) said the

d

a

1-

TC

n,

at

D 3

nurfe's

nurse's husband? 'My good dame and I have prayed a thousand and a thousand times for your health and prosperity. Body of me! (good young gentleman) you must take some · little refreshment; 'tis so very late, that you ".may well want a cup of wine." --- What strange language was all this, to a Chevalier, who knew no other flyle than that which fuits the bulkin, and whose, imagination was crouded with the most gloomy ideas! -- "Good people, freplied he) the zeal you discover, will atone for the rough manner in which you now address " me; but you have faid enough, and filence will become you much better.' --- 'Bodlikins! (cried the nurse) I love to let my tongue run on, when I am in humour for it; and I'd. have you to know, that my clack is not yet half over.' - Leave these compliments,' (said the old gentleman) 'alight, (dear nephew) we · shall be much better in the parlour, and you may there tell us your whole ftory.' --- 'My moments, my lord, (replied Pharfamond) are very precious; I myself cannot stay, but will · leave Clito, who can inform you of every thing. Od's my life (faid the nurse) fince we have got you here, you fhan't ftir.' --- ' Where's this Clito, continued the uncle,' (he feeing no one but his nephew and Colin. ---) 'There he . is,' (cried Pharfamond) pointing to his squire. · How! (replied the uncle) has Colin got the name of Clito? and I the title of my lord? fhould you go on in this manner, we shan't know foon, who and who is together: What frenzy must this be, which suggests such odd names? know that I am not used to these ftrange founds.' - ' My lord, (replied Pharfamond) the reverence I bear you, has hitherto made me submit to what my eyes have here 6 been

the

been tortured with; but now, permit me to retire, for infinitely greater cares call me hence. ——Scarce had our illustrious knight pronounced these words, but he was for going off; upon which the uncle cried out, 'Stop, stop him.'——'Stand' by, (cried the nurse, almost bursting with love for her foster son) 'I'll lose my life sooner than let my dear child go from us. Return, my dear boy, 'tis your endearing nurse calls you: you must certainly be tempted by the devil.'—Gods! (cried Pharsamond) with what obstacles am I furrounded! sollow, follow me, Clito; let us fly this place, and obey the call of duty. Inchanting princess! alas! forgive, forgive the moments I am thus trisling away."

e

e

d

16

id

ye

u

Ty.

re

ill

g.',

no

he

.

the

rd?

an't

hat

odd

refe.

har-

her-

here. been

' Alas ! gentlemen, cried the uncle, 'tis all over, and my nephew is flark staring mad: Princesses, Clito's, Lords! What will all this end in? good heavens! is my nephew bewitched, he who, once, was prudence itself! take him this moment by the collar, together with that rascal Colin, whom I'll have well strapadoed, to extort from him the meaning of all this.' - The old gentleman's order was immediately put in execution. The fervants feized the knight with their brawny arms, when he struggled, bawled, and called on the unrelenting deities; during which, other servants laid hold of Clito. - ' To what fate (cried the knight) am I referved! and you, groveling wretches, who dare to stop me, tremble at this mighty arm, and the vengeance it will immediately inflict!'—These words filted all with aftonishment, and almost made their hair stand an end. - By this time Pharsamond had been taken from his horse, when sour of the stoutest servants carried him as tho' he had lost the use of his limbs. The nurse accompanied

D 4

he prisoner, exhorting him not to be so obstinate. Clito brought up the rear; and as the mafter's frenzy made them conclude that the fquire was as mad as he could be, they therefore brought Clito forward in the same posture. - ' I fancy, (fays one of them, to him) that you'll entertain us with a fine parcel of lying stories:'-- Glad-Iy would I tell more than I know, (replied the · faid fquire) could I but escape a drubbing.'---Our two young ramblers were carried into the parlour, and the door was shut. Pharsamond, was placed in an easy chair. The instant our knight, was feated, he threw his eyes round the company. He now feemed all astonishment; and some very doleful reflexions made by our knight, almost recovered him from his enthusiastick fit. - 'Well,' (my dear child, faid the nurse) do you know us at last? d'ye see your good " uncle?" -- These last words restored the nephew entirely to his reason; but he now was more vexed to find himself recovered from his delicious frenzy, than forry at his having fallen a prey to it: all these dreams fled his imagination that inflant. Cedalifa appeared no longer a princess in his eye; his delirium being now so far decreased, as to make him consider her in no other light than that of a lady, the most worthy the affection of a man, who, like himself, could set a just value on a tender and noble heart. He called to mind the strain in which she had delivered herself, and her most engaging behaviour. He also was charmed, with the fort of tenderness The had indulged him; and tho' he separated the ideas of princess and knight, he yet owned (within himself,) she deserved that as much should be done for her fake, as the most valiant heroes had performed for their princesses. To this he added, the manner in which he had become acquainted with her; the con-

conformity of their tempers, as well as the fublimity of their ideas. The title of !night, with which Cedalifa had honour'd Pharfamond, pleas'd him also highly. But it was not now in his power to look upon all these things as real. This affembly of gentlemen of the neighbourhood, these servants, his uncle, their vulgar way of speaking; all these circumstances united had dissolved the charm, fo that he griev'd at his being no longer what he wish'd to be. He now was sensible that his noble imitation of those famous lovers, had carried him into the visionary regions; so that, without losing his fondness for adventures of chivalry, he yet undeceiv'd himself so far, as to be persuaded, that he did not resemble the knight-errants he had read of.

Shame follow'd these reflexions, when he cast down his eyes, then lifted them to his uncle, and afterwards threw them down again. These symptoms of confusion, were accompanied with a figh; and after having fufficiently play'd the bashful, he gaz'd at Clito, who, (for his part) looked pitifully on his mafter; and with an air expressive of the dread he was under, with regard to the ending of this affair; Clito, (fays he) what is to be done with me, and why are fo many people got ' together ?'- Good Sir (replied Clito) how do I know? Your uncle thinks you mad, and they fay that I also am crazy; and yet, (heaven will bear me witness) if you are distracted, 'tis onot my fault. But furely I myself cannot, with ' the least shadow of justice, be accus'd of being ever so little disordered in my senses.'

d-

13

2

n

1-

ar

er

ne

et

Ie

r-

Ir.

es

he

h-

be

er-

the

n-

Upon this Pharfamond, turning to the old gentleman, cried; —— 'How, uncle, d'ye take 'me for a madman?'—'Indeed nephew, (repli-'ed the old gentleman) I take you for what you D 5

really are. What can those affairs of consequence be, which (you fay) call'd you abroad? What did you mean by the words you addresfed to your princess? Then you chang'd every one of our names; fay, are thele the fumes of a diseas'd brain, or down right madness? I must dive to the bottom of this affair; especially I will discover the cause of your absence, and fhall find means to make Colin tell the whole truth, in case you should refuse to do so .- ' By my troth, replied Colin I have not sworn secrecy; and I'll make a full discovery, rather than fuffer even a fillip on the nose: the only thing that diffurbs me, is the cudgelling with which you threatned me; and, was I but easy in my mind, I would speak with the utmost confidence. But, (good Sir) why beat me, if I pro-" mife to disclose every thing, without your going · to fuch lengths? I may be bruis'd to pieces with the blows, and still may you be as much in the dark as ever.'- All the time that Colin was talking, Pharfamond, who, when he thought of his uncle's being told his several follies, could not forbear blushing; look'd at his unworthy fquire with an air of romantic haughtiness, and said, the moment he had ended :- 'What mighty fecrets are these thou wilt reveal?'- O Sir! (cries · Colin) I know that my frankness and fincerity " must displease you; but imagine yoursels in my · place, and then fay, whether I should not be the greatest fool upon earth, were I to submit pa-· tiently to a drubbing; rather than confess, that the princess and her waiting maid, (who bewitch'dus both) are a couple of errant baggages? · a fine fecret this indeed, to keep it at the expense of my shoulders. After all, (Sir) 'tis happy for " us, that the old beldam, (your princes's mother)

turn'd us out of doors; otherwise we had still been in the power of those two wretches.'-

Hold, infolent wretch,' (cries Pharfamond, whom the coarseness of Clito's language had again

fir'd almost to madness) ' thou may'st thank all

the company present, for my patience; for, was it not out of regard to them, I would teach

thee the reverence thou owest to the noblest, and

" most adorable woman under the sun."

Pharfamond pronounc'd these last words with fo terrible an air, that his wrath might almost be put in parallel with that of the bravest antient knight-errant. He knew with how much feverity those heroes used to punish the infults which their princesses met with at any time; and though fully fenfible, that he himself was no longer a knight, still the extreme insolence with which Clito had attack'd his miffress, work'd as powerfully at that instant, as his romantic ideas had done a little before. - Clito did not dare to make the least answer, when Pharfamond spoke thus to his uncle : - ' I am (fays he) quite spent with fatigue, and therefore beg leave to retire to my bed-That insolent wretch there, all chamber. whose secrets you want to discover, will then be more at liberty to speak; for should he offer to do this in my hearing, I very probably might endeavour to stop his mouth.'-- Retire (ne-' phew) replied the uncle, you have the leave of these gentlemen, and mine likewise, to do so.' Go to bed immediately, your head wants rest. " more than you imagine.' ---- Pharfamond did not condescend to make the least reply to these last words; but rifing on a sudden, and with an air of melancholy, expressive of the hero, he slew and shut himself up in his bed-chamber, there to meditate on every thing that had past. As to Cli-

t

¢

y

t

-

e

r

to, he staid in the parlour with the rest of the company, but without speaking a syllable; Pharsamond's anger refraining his tongue, which was a great pain to the fquire. After thut our knight had left the room, the uncle, and the gentlemen his neighbours, held a dumb conversation, (if this expression may be allow'd) they shrugging up their shoulders, and standing with their arms across.—Says one, What can all this mean! strange doings fure !- Such exclamations were the only words which accompanied the dumb figns of their aftonishment. The fervants, who also staid in the parlour, play'd much the fame part; but with this difference, that their action was confiderably ftronger. The nurse especially lifted up her arms with all her might; and feem'd, in this attitude, to reproach heaven for Pharfamond's frenzy. Her husband wrung his hands, casting his eyes on the uncle and the rest of the company; purposely to be taken notice of, and that he might not lofe the merit of his woe. The meanest servants, not being at full liberty to vent their grief, contented themselves with expressing, by the said posture in which they stood, how greatly they were affected with the univerfal forrow. Colin, standing in the midst of these two orders of men, look'd mournfully at them alternately; so that he had the air of a criminal in a court of juffice.

At last, finding that no one took notice of him, he form'd a resolution, spite of the terror with which he was feiz'd, worthy the fquire of an illufrious knight; I mean, that he had prefence of mind enough to think of getting away. Notwithstanding the boldness of this resolve, he yet took the most prudent measures, in order to make his escape silly. He now had cast the last look on

the company, when, imagining that their affliction was rifen just to the height, which must deprive them of their fight; he first drew one foot, and then the other, as gently as possible. Clito was oblig'd every time he began to move, to aim himself with fresh courage, as the least noise might wake the people round him; and should his design be discover'd, they must naturally conclude that he would not have attempted to steal away so very cautiously, but for some very urgent reason.

Already Clito had escap'd two thirds of the danger; already this hapless fellow, having courage and wisdom for his guides, but being unfavour'd by heaven, was got to the threshold. And now one fingle leap would have done his business, when an unhappy circumspection prov'd his ruin. Before Clito took the last leap, he thought it proper to confult the faces of the company once more. Clito now perceiv'd nothing inauspicious, and every thing was calm: but as he had just reach'd the door, and was going to jump, the very moment that his head was turn'd towards the company; that head, that indifcreet head, dash'd forcibly against the door. Clito roaring aloud, fell flat on the floor, when his cries, and the noise made by the blow, awak'd and alarm'd the whole affembly, who, till then, feem'd lull'd afleep by grief. now, all of them flarting, and turning about. Good heavens! what a fight was there! Clito sprawling at the door, and his hair all bloody! The cries of the luckless fellow increased the hor-They all advance forward, when the gentlemen, the uncle, and the fervants, mix indifcriminately round him. The compassionate nurse, who, as the oldest servant, thought it incumbent on her to be the most necessary person in the house,

e

d

d

1-

ir

1,

th

u-

of

t-

et

ke

on

he

stepp'd forward, in order take him up, calling upon every one to help her. At her command, twenty arms rais'd up Clito, and fet him on his legs

again.

Our squire, who, till now, had never seen his blood trickle from so dangerous a part, declared by his howlings, and the frightful wry saces he made, that he thought himself dying; he struggling so strongly in the arms of those who held him, as show'd his extreme regret, at being burried out of life in so shocking a manner. Unhappily for Clite, a quite different construction was put on his cries and his kicking. The good nurse, who, with her handkerchief and apron, had by this time wip'd away the blood which ran down his sace, mistook the convulsions of poor Clito, for a sit of distraction. Fly, sly, (says she to other servants) and get a cord. My good lads, don't loose your hold; the poor sellow was going to lay

violent hands on himself: should he get loose,

he'll certainly fly at us.'

Colin heating these words, struggled with greater violence than ever.—— I am (cried he) neither distracted, nor has the devil got possession of me.'—— Hold him! hold him! (replied the nurse) should he escape, he'll beat us to a mummy.'——— Cou'd I but get thee in my clutches,

thou vixen! (cried Clito).

During this fquabble, the gentlemen and the uncle, got round the poor fellow; when they endeavour'd, by gentle methods, to calm the frenzy with which they imagin'd him to be feiz'd.—— You'll be well again foon, faid one, stroaking gently his shoulder, in the same manner as a riding-master wou'd a fiery horse. Colin, during these kind speeches, exasperated at seeing his blood flow, answered only by cries, which might well be term'd howlings. The air of his whole person

was fuch, as to be, at one and the same time, both frightful and comical. Every feature of his face, feem'd to have its peculiar grimace; and as he was naturally homely, (and this of the comic kind) no vizor, how grotefque foever, could appear more hideous and furprizing. By this time he had quite tir'd those who held him; when the perfidious messengers whom the nurle had lent to fetch a cord, came back; the one with an old well rope, above twelve yards long, and the other with a huge roll of whip-cord. Clito, feeing thefe inauspicious clowns, whom he consider'd as his executioners, began to cry, howl, kick; and all this with fo much fury, that the spectators might justly suppose him to be out of his senses. -May the devil fly away with you all, (cried he) if you don't let me die in peace, and loose my hands and legs!'---But 'twas in vain that poor

Clito tore his throat with bawling; the inexorable kindness of the nurse made her deaf to his fad

moan.

d

Ŋ

e,

at-

ei-

of

he

m-

es,

un-

ea-

nzy

cing

rid-

ring

lood

well

erfon was

They were some time in consultation, which of the two cords to tye him with. The fervants were of opinion, that as Colin's fury was rifen to fuch a height, 'twould be best to employ the well-rope, as being strongest; but the uncle and the rest of the gentlemen, concluded, that 'twas more proper to use the whip-cord, as the former might eat into his flesh. The nurse agreeing to this, the whipcord was cut, and put double. Colin, beholding this mournful apparatus, made one powerful effort more to get out of their hands; but not succeeding in his attempt, his ftrength fail'd him, and he fcarce mov'd. Those who held the whip-cord drew near, whilst others put Colin's legs forward, when his great foul could oppose this mighty infult no otherwise, than by a faint struggle. But lo! his

his feet are now bound. They feiz'd his hands, which are too weak to refift the affront put upon them. Colin, reclining his head on the arms of those who were tying him, and having no other weapon left than his teeth, employ'd them with so much vigour, that he never appeared more formidable than in his defeat. One of the servants, being furiously bit, roar'd aloud, and gave the squire a mighty blow on the head, to force him to quit his hold; but this servant was already wound-

ed, and Clito had taken his revenge.

Colin being now completely tied, those about him refolv'd to stop his blood, which still trickled. To do this with the greater ease, they firetch'd him at full length on a long table. He now opened broad his eyes, in which weariness and grief were painted. The nurse, arming herself with her scissars, cut the squire's hair, to examine the wound. A gentleman who pretended to be well skill'd in furgery, after declaring the wound to be very flight, and caufing it to be wash'd, ordered a fort of plaister to be applied. This being done, they bound Colin's head, who rewarded them, no otherwise than by venting ten thousand curses, and wishing the devil might break their necks. Colin's head being bound, the nurse bid three or four servants lay him on the bed, till fuch time as his mad fit should be over. Accordingly the domesticks took him up in their arms, and carried him into a bed-chamber, where one of them staid to watch him.

Pharsamond's uncle, being greatly troubled at his nephew's frenzy, dismissed his neighbours; and went, with the nurse, into the knight's chamber. They found him lying upon the bed, and plung'd in a deep sleep; bodily weariness having depriv'd him of the rapturous

they did not think proper to wake him, hoping that Morpheus, by means of his wand, would charm his madness, and lull him to balmy rest. They now came both out, and shut him in his room. It being late, the servants withdrew, and

every one went to bed.

On the morrow, the uncle rose pretty early, and called the nurse. He was for waking his nephew that instant, but she advised him, to first see what condition Colin was in; in order to discover, by his means, the whole truth, in case he should be restored to his senses. This advice being sollowed, they went to the place where Colin was, who, spite of his manacles, had long laid snoring. A servant had watched him a considerable time; but the deep sleep he was in, made the sellow who looked after him conclude, that 'twere needless to

stay any longer in the room.

The squire, when the uncle and the nurse entered the chamber, was still sleeping, bound as he The noise they now made, waked him; when he started up, and cried; - What is it 'you want?' - Saying these words, and forgetting that he was tied, he attempted to draw the curtains; but the whip-cord round him, made him remember, that he had his tongue only at liberty. The first object that struck his eyes was the nurse, which threw him into such a rage, that he cried: — What in the devil's name do you here? you to whom I am obliged for being thus ' shockingly bound: Came you hither to change ' my cords? stand off, (I say) for should you ap-' proach me, I'll claw you in return for all the ' flea-bites with which I have been plagued this tedious night, without being once able to scratch. - I have been fo curfedly maul'd, that one

would have fwore those vermin knew that my hands were tied, and confequently that I was unable to defend myself.' - My dear boy, resplied the nurse. I am not come to hurt a hair of thy head. Didst thou but know how mad thou wert yesterday, thou would'st thank me, a thousand and a thousand times, for taking from thee the power of killing thyfelf.' - You are an arrant liar (fays Colin) I never was diftracted in my life; and I'll stake the first mess of broth I get in my hands, that from Adam, down to the present time, there has not been a fingle madman in our family.'- Softly, foftly, ' my good lad, (replied the nurse) the noise thou makeft, will quite stupify thee, fo that thou " may'ft again lose thy fenses." - These words were scarce out of her mouth, when the uncle, who had overheard the fquabble, came, in order to fosten Colin's anger. - ' A good day to you, Sir, fays Colin, the instant he perceived him; our parish priest has often told me, that it is the duty of a christian to return good for evil. Well, Colin, (replied the uncle) how dost thou do now?' - 'Faith, Sir, (replied he) thanks to your kind commands, I should have been vastly bad, had it not been for this bed."-But, (continued the old gentleman) I'll go and e give orders for the unloofing of you, provided · you'll tell me where my nephew and you have been, and how both of you came to run distracted.' At these words, Colin, who could not, at first, imagine that he was really mad, began to be in some doubt as to that article. - Sir, says he, looking at the uncle with an air of confidence; lay your hand on your heart, and then fpeak to me with the same fincerity as tho' you were at confession. - Can you affirm for a truth, that I was out of my fenses yesterday?'- You ' certainly

certainly was, (replied the uncle) fince the fervants were forced to tie you, after you had broke your own head; but now, that you have an interval of reason, tell me immediately your whole adventure.'- 'Stay, good Sir, one moment (fays Colin) I should be glad to know what I have to trust to. By my troth, this is an affair of consequence; and if I was distracted e yesterday, I certainly must be no less so at this time: for I imagine, that I was not madder yesterday, than I am now; excepting a few oaths, which I vented at our nurse. But now, be fo good as to inform me, whether my head was really turn'd?' - You may believe me, (ree plied the uncle) but let not that trouble you; and fince you are reftored to your fenses, tell me 'all that befel you during your absence?' - 'I restored to my senses? (replied Colin,) I myfelf cannot say, nor would I swear it. You fancy that I am in my wits again, but are not you vourself mistaken?' - Be easy as to this article, (fays the old gentleman;) and as a proof that I believe you perfectly recovered, I'll give orders this instant, for your being loosed." - ' Hold there, if you please,' (says Colin eagerly, and drawing back his hands;) ' had I known that my brain was turn'd, I should not have been so exasperated at my being tied; and I must have been distracted, fince I did not perceive my being But let my whip-cord alone, fince I am bound with it. One misfortune is enough at a time; should I dash my head to pieces, this would be much worse than the being bit by fleas. I have a mind to pass the day in the manner I onow lie, during which, you may order people to watch me, to fee whether my frenzy will return; for I myfelf know not what to think about

" about it.' - " Well, (says the uncle) will you promife to reveal the whole truth, and nothing but the truth.' - 'That I will, my good Sir, (replied Colin;) I swear to do so; I swear, I say, by my poor brains, which, for ought I know, ' may be loft for ever; but which I beg of heaven, or good St. Anthony of Padua, (who can recover every thing,) to restore me. Question me article by article; and you'll find that my anfwers will be as exact as if I read them out of

a book.

Tell me first, (replied the old gentleman) what was the reason of your setting out so early from hence yesterday morning? What design did you go upon, and what did you do?'-Fair and foftly, (fays Colin,) let us reckon things one by one. First; - Stay; I have already forgot the question you asked me. By my troth, I should be still much worse off, should I likewise lose my memory! Begin again: but hold: now I have it. - You defire to know the reason, why young Mr. Pharsamond and I set out from hence fo early?'- 'What d'ye mean by Pharfamond? cried the uncle; what animal is this you are speaking of?' - I mean your nephew, (fays Colin) who will be a very pretty fellow, when he also shall have recovered his wits .- But, hush! let us take but a fingle step at a time. He must be called Mr. Pharsamond, a aname which ought not to be envied him; for I can affure you that he justly deserves it, as I do that of Clito, lately bestowed on me; and confirmed by a strong box o'the ear, as well as by a great number of kicks, both before and behind.'-But to return to our first subject.

For your better information, it will be necessary that I go above thirty miles about, in relating our adventures. But while I think on't, you promised me a drubbing yesterday; now my conscience will not let me utter a word more, except you declare this instant, that you will not put your first promise in execution.—'I will not, upon my honour,' (replied the uncle.)—
O! (says Colin,) I must desire you to swear to this.'

The uncle, quite impatient to be informed of the adventure in question, was upon the point of ordering Colin the promised bastinado, in order to force him to speak, but forbore, lest this should throw the fellow into a fresh fit of distraction; and therefore chose rather to swear, as Colin requested. This being done. - 'I'll now tell you every thing, continues Colin: And (let me observe by the way,) I must certainly have recovered my wits, fince I act with fo much caution. You shall know, Sir; or, (as the man fays,) vou shall know, because I will inform you; I say then, you shall know all I can tell you.'- Blood!' (cries the old gentleman) ' tell me then all you do know.'- I intend to do fo, replied Colin ;) but before I begin, it will be proper that you inform me, what name I must give your nephew: ' shall I call him Pharfamond or Trumpington?'-Which you will (replies the uncle;) pox of this ' impertinence of your's, call him by what name ' you think proper, provided you do but answer ' all my questions.' - ' If this be the case, (said ' Colin) I'll continue to call him Pharfamond; and at the fame time, you'll be so good as to ' let me go by the name of Clito: - Clito and Pharfamond, these are the two first points.' -"I really grow impatient, (replied the uncle;) will you have done foon!' - Indeed shall I ' (replies

(replies Colin;) after I have made an end, I fhall have no more to fay: however, don't interrupt me. But you'll fall in a passion again.'

What is it you'd have? speak (said the

uncle.)' — 'I'm weary of these cords, (replied Colin;) I cannot utter a word without having

my hands and feet at liberty. Besides, I shall not run any hazard in being untied; for, let the

worst go to the worst, you'll prevent my doing any mischief; no one being better qualified to

Iook after a madman than yourfelf.'

Colin then presented his hands and feet to the nurse, who untied them that instant. -- Dear me! (fays he, stretching himself,) how easy have you made me! I now feel more joy than I did when my mother was delivered of me. What a charming invention are the hands and feet! I * had rather die than be without them.' - Says the old gentleman, ' now you are quite at liberty, go on with your adventure.' - You're right, (fays Colin;) but in what part of it was I? in finding my legs again, I have loft the thread of my flory, but I have no more to do than to run after it; let us come back once 4 more, and then proceed. I was, I was; let me * fee !- Was I at breakfast, I should not be so much at a loss to know where I am. (Be this, s good Sir, faid only by the bye.) But methinks 4 my appetite is returned with my hands and feet: · I could eat with as much delight as I now firetch myself. Be therefore so charitable, (good nurse) sas to give me, at least, some bread and wine. 4 I'll lay you any wager that my reason will come back full gallop; this must be the least that can happen, fince a fop, in wine, can make even partots speak,

The uncle, at these words, was going to be right-down angry; but the nurse nodded to him not to be impatient; when calling a fervant, the bid him bring Colin his breakfast. Presently after the fervant came with a bottle, and a huge lunchion of bread. Colin jumped for joy at the fight; our hapless squire, having not only spent the night very reftlessly, but had also gone to bed without supper; whence he took what was prefented to him with fuch eagerness, and eat and drank in fo gluttonous a manner, that one would have thought he wanted to do both at once. -God be prais'd (fays he) if he takes away with one hand, he bestows with the other. onot for my good stomach, I should die with grief that I have loft my fenses.' - Colin chewed heartily all the time he was speaking; and crammed the bread down so very fast, that in less than half a quarter of an hour, he had devoured all that had been brought him, when wiping his mouth with his shirt-sleeve; - Let's now see (fays Colin,) ' what's to be done. I find myfelf fresher than an egg just laid. And so, Sir, 'you may begin your questions; you'll find me as ready in my answers as an university-scholar.

'Tell me then, (said the old gentleman,) what it was you did, at your setting out so early from hence?'— 'Says Colin, we must, with your

leave, go a step or two backwards.'

e

0

0

10

fo

15,

ks

t:

ch

(e)

ne.

mg

can

ven

The

Did you never look into any of those charming romances, where we read of a knight meeting with a princess in a wood, or snoring in a flowery arbour, on which occasion the knight is greatly assonished at finding her? The hero, on spying so bright a treasure, turns either pale or red (for this is as it happens.) He then falls

" upon his knees before the fleeping fair-one, after which he vents two or three fighs, in proportion to the strength of the nymphs slumbers. If she fill continues plung'd in sleep, the knight, who by this time shakes as tho' he had an ague, lifts " up one of her hands, white as chalk, and adorned with fingers lovely as though they had been ' made on purpose; and immediately puts his ' mouth' to her hand. He then impresses his ' lips very strongly, which waking the princes, " The screams as though the were fleaing, and endeavours to fly; but the knight, catching hold of the tail of her gown, kiffes the tip, either of her shoe or slipper, but which I cannot directly fay, books being quite filent as to that " matter.' - " Why, fellow, (cried the old gentleman) what has all this nonfense to do with the things I ask of thee?' - ' Have patience, good Sir, (replies Colin, with all imaginable phlegm;) and only tell me, whether you have " never read of those knights?" - " I furely have f (replied the uncle) but what has this to do with 'your story?' - ' As much (continues the other) as bread has to do with foop. Pray let me go on ' myown way. I was got to the shoes, or slippers, which the knight clasps. The princess then gives him a look, and speaks certain harsh words, all which are very different from those employed by us. He then asks her pardon, like a schoolboy, whose master is going to whip him. knight tells her of his burning flame, at which the flax of his heart instantly takes fire: after " which they are reconciled, I cannot fay how; but this I well know, that the knight rambles up and down like any mad thing; immediately after this, another knight, (but of the villainous fort) fets the f princel

foreign princes on his horse, and rides away with her.
And now the knight's appetite is taken away; he roves, like the wandring Jew, through groves and forests; he then fights God knows how ma-

ny battles, in which both parties are as lavish of

blood, as tho' it were meer water.'

Now, most worthy Sir, you must have read all these things, (continued Colin;) and this is the reason why we lest our house by day-break this morning.'—' I don't understand you (continued the uncle) why must you needs set out, because you have read romantic adventures?"—
Pray let me go on with my story, (says Co-

f lin.")

n

1-

18

h

er

ut

nd

is,

he

واع

Young Mr. Pharfamond, and I, had studied together, those charming romances. O my good Sir! there's nothing like a right turn of mind. We thought there was fomething fo extraordinary, fo very out of the way, in the life led by those knights, that we often were tempted to rove as they did, up and down; and fall in love with princesses as noble as theirs. All the young ladies, in our neighbourhood, seemed to us like so many cook-maids, in comparison of those I have been speaking of, for not one of the former has fense enough to go and sleep in a forest, or a bower; besides, instead of crying aloud, when their hands are kiffed, they laugh in your face like fo many fools. Only catch at their flippers, (or their shoes, if you will,) and ' fee whether they'll fo much as guess at your ' meaning; in short (to proceed in my story) we don't love fuch vulgar wenches. Now one love: ' ly day, (which God was pleas'd to fend us) Mr. 'Pharfamond went to take an airing in a wood ' hard by, whilst you was running after a hare. But (good Sir) you'd never guess what our young gentleman found in that wood; he furely must VOL. I.

DYAT

have been wrapt in his mother's shift, at his birth; for, (wou'd you think it?) he there met

with a princess.

What mean you by princels, (replied the old gentleman) are there any in our country?" By my faith, (replied Colin) I am as incredulous as you can be in this matter; and in order to believe that part of the flory, I would gladly have feen the arms of her principality, or family; but the was as good as a princels, fince the was there then, as fuch. And now Mr. Pharfamond faneying himself a knight, went directly up to ber, when she would have fled."- But who was with her? (fays the uncle, interrupting him.) Her waiting-maid (replied the squire) for you are to know, Sir, that when princesses retire to woods or forests, they are never to have any other company. Our princess, therefore, would have fled, which was the very thing the ought to do : but Mr. Pharlamond stopping her, the cried-Sir-knight, this way; Sir-knight, that way, To make short, they parted; Mr. Pharfamond returned home, buried in contemplation, after which he told me the whole story, and so you need not doubt the reft.'

thing from me.'—' When I had heard the flory, continued Colin; (and now I think on't, 'twas one morning that he came and told me all this) he declar'd, that he had a mighty mind to ramble after the princes, and find out her haunts. Says I to him:—— (Odds me! I have forgot what I did say to him;) but you yourself are in some doubt about this. —— He again ask'd me, if I would go along with him; I answer'd, yes; and thus you see, that we were both willing. However, I fell alleep again, when he drew off the

bed-clothes; upon which I jumpt out in my hirt. I then open'd the window to fee what weather it was, and found that it look'd exactly s as when it will be a fine day. I rubbed my eves two or three times, after which I yawn'd fo violently In thort, I huddled on my clothes, and this being done, Mr. Pharfamond and I fet out. I forgot to tell you, that we did not breakfast before our departure, of which I repented heartily afterwards. Behold us now gone forth. Mr. Pharfamond mus'd, and did not fpeak a word; whilft I held my tongue, and did not utter a syllable : We both were too wife to open our lips, being fenfible that knights, during their peregrinations, should be down in the mouth, and fo we were; and furely he ought f not to be a shoemaker, who will not stick in his s awl. Don't fancy, Sir, that I was a knight, f any otherwise than by my being mounted on a 5 fleed. I am noble only when on horse-back. You know that a fly is not an ox. I ferv'd as f quite to Mr. Pharfamond, who was the knight : fo that 'tis plain I was the fly and he the ox. We went into a wood or forest, when Mr. Phanfamond flepp'd foremost, and I (Colin) behindhim. He gaz'd a long time on two or three bushes, and faid a thouland tender things to them, because this was the place where he had first met with his princess. Commend me to those who know their business: had my young master been apprentice to a furgeon or an apothecary, he must have handled the squirt to a miracle.' Twould have done your heart good, to have feen him act the knight-errant; and I would lay my head. that there is not a princefs in the world but would s gladly have given her old clothes to possess him. 6 I hatea boafter, but had a queen's waiting-womair

le

I

ne

I

nd

w-

the

ed.

' man peep'd at my horse and me, thro' a keybole, she would never have forgot us. After ' this (by our lady) we arrived, by I know not what chance, which I have quite forgot, at the flittle door of the garden belonging to this manfion. Mr. Pharfamond entered it, and I staid for him at the door, and waited there fome hours, kicking my heels all the time. Finding my hnight did not return, and that my teeth were grown as long, (at least) as my ears, I also went into the garden. Here I found wide walks, then wider and wider still, and afterwards narrow ones. I look'd about me, and, at last perceived . Mr. Pharfamond at a diffance, holding his fword, naked as my new-shaven head. He was kneeling before a young maiden, who neither firred hand or foot. Knowing that this was the princess, I went up to them, and would have brought away Mr. Pharfamond. He laughed at " me; I laughed at him; I faid not a word; he fell backwards, after which many people coming up, they carried him off, as tho' he had been a fack of corn, and the princess was dragg'd a-Ione by the arm. We now were carried into a fine house, when some people laid Mr. Pharsa-' mond between two delicate fine sheets, white as ' milk. During this interval, in came a surgeon's man who dreffed the wound (for there was one) when I threw myself into an easy chair. I then found myself fick at heart, upon which, water was thrown over my face to recover me; but it had no more effect upon me, than meer element, which it really was. At last, some good soul · brought me a bottle of wine, and pour'd away. ' I drank; good heavens! I open'd my eyes, then 'mov'd my lips; afterwards my hands, my legs, in thort my everything was in motion; for I feiz'd richiti.

I feiz'd the bottle, and left nothing but the glass. We afterwards liv'd all the time in this find house, and were fed like pigs that were fat? tening. Body o'me ! if we did but hem, in stantly turkies and fowls were put on the spit, and bacon in the pot; and (the merrieft thing of all,) we were as much made of as though we had been a couple of young puppies. The whole family was fo fond and fearful of lofing us, that one would have fwore that we had been wedges of gold. However, I must confess, that I yes? terday was highly exasperated against both our princess and her waiting-woman; for which I beg their pardons ten thousand times, being really out of my fenses. Ah! the sweet girls! Had you once beheld the waiting-woman, (my dearest love) you could not have forbore setting out, as early as we did, in fearth of her. Her hair (let me tell you, nurse) is not like your's, and yet 'tis neither like horse-hair, nor hemp: but you know there are different kinds of hair 4 her hair is as strongly rooted in her head as hair 1 should be, and black as ink; whilft her face on the other hand, is whiter than meal. Now, imagine this face fet off with eyes, a nofe, a mouth.—But hold, this is not all; for the words eyes, nofe, mouth, are foon spoke; but you must know how they are form'd. And Hobby, our foster-father, has, like other folks, fomething of all these in his face; but tho' he has as much of them, as my fweet darling, he yet refembles a he-maftiff, and my darling is no ways like a mafiff-bitch.

A bitch yourself, (cried the nurse) exasperated at the odious comparison; and your sweet-heart is an ugly monkey. An impertinent wretch !

If I am a bitch, pray what must my huse band

band be? Was our master not here, (you little jackanapes) I'd give you a good douce on the chops.'— 'Hold your tongue, (cow's dug!) replied Colin.'— The nurse rous'd to sury at these words, gave Colin a punch in the stomach with all her might.' Colin, having now both hands and legs at liberty, slew to her cap, and pulled it off; when the uncle ran between them, in order to put an end to the fray; and commanded them with a magisterial voice, to stop.— I stop, Sir, cried the nurse; I'll tear the villain's eyes out.'— And I, (old harridan, added Colin) will pull out your tongue by the roots.'—Such was the language in which they greeted each other, and

continued fighting all the time. In to the

But now the uncle being determin'd to park them, endeavour'd to draw Colin to him; when the latter, to fave his chops from the nurse, (the levelling at them with her clench'd fift) entwirt'd his leg in that of his mafter, when both fell, Colin. at top, and the mafter under him. The nurse, rushing forward, fell over Colin upon which the mafter bawl'd, that he was almost stiffed. Colin was taken by the ears, and roar'd out that devils were tearing them off. The nure, fauffling thro' her nofe, which Colin fqueez'd as hard as he could, vented a thousand imprecations. During this hot work, the foster-father burst in .- So ho ! (cries the old fellow to his wife, feeing her upon Colin and the uncle) why all this preffing! do'ft * take our master and Colin for a couple of bunches of grapes?' He then endeavour'd to drag away his wife, out of the battle.—Let me alone, (old nizy) fays the to him. Upon this the fosterfather, (a true clown) gave her a frong box o'the ear, to stop her impertinence. The petulant female now forgetting her enemy, rifes on her feet, and pushes away her husband with all her might. Upon this her husband falls, with his side, against the lock of the door; when the pain he felt, putting him out of all temper, which he hitherto had endeavour'd to curb; he again attack'd his wife, whom he threw on the ground, holding her fast by the hair. The old gentleman, who by this time was got upon his legs again, did all he could to put an end to the fray; during which Colin belought Andrew to well drub his wife.—

Courage, (my lad, says he) should you kill her,

what would it fignify? we have no more occasi-

on for a bubby.

But now the husband's rage abated .- ' Here's enough for to day; (favs he, letting go his wife) ' we'll keep the rest for another time.'-Villain that thou art, (replied the nurse, her hair Aying about her ears;) 'tis very happy for thee that thou art the strongest. But thou shalt pay for this, (drunken fot) or I'll die for it. With what joy could I fee thee hang'd, as well as those who married us. But flay; I'll fly to the parish priest, and he shall unmarry me. I'll rather go · barefooted to Rome, and speak to his Holinels. - 'Thou hast no more to do but to set out this moment, replied the husband; I'll give thee out he-ass and her foal. But return not back, for I fwear by all the cardinals in the world, that I'll make thee drink of our well-water, whilst the The nurse said a bull is getting ready.'thousand things more, and then held her LOGU UE

But now fresh cares making the old gentleman insensible of the pain caus'd by his fall, he went into his nephew's chamber, supported by the softer-

father and Colin.

For a long time Pharlamond (for by this name I shall afterwards call him) had been awake; and having flept feven or eight hours, he found his ideas greatly chang'd. The moment he broke from his flumbers, he called to mind the adventure of the preceding evening; his relistance against those who had pulled him from his horse; the answers he made to his uncle, and those who spoke to him: all these particulars returned to his imagination. when his remembrance of them filled him with a fort of fhame, which made him dread the old gentleman's prefence. He could not even conceive, how it was possible for him to forget himfelf fo far, as to think it incumbent on him to copy after those heroes of romance of whom he had read. Nevertheless, their adventures appear'd glorious in his eye; and at the fame time that he own'd within himself, that it would be fight down madness to endeavour to imitate them; he still could not forbear wishing, that the age he lived in, wou'd permit the species of passion with which those heroes had been inflam'd. But this reflexion, was only the ef-fect of a tender mind, too susceptible of impressions. And the was not posses'd of reason enough, to suppress an extravagant sensibility; he yet had the power to point out to himself his error, in giving way to that fensibility, which he was allow'd to feel, but not to liften to and follow.

Having made these reflexions, he ruminated on what he had best say to his uncle, when he should visit him, and enquire into the motives of his absence. As it was not possible for Pharfamond to hit upon a fingle reason to colour his mad conduct, he therefore resolved to give a fair and natural account

count of every thing; befides his calling to mind, that Colin must have told the whole story by this time. He had just formed this resolution, when his uncle entred, he having left his two squires at the door. Pharfamond then beheld the old gentleman, with fuch a modest and confused air, as instantly gave him to understand, that his kinsman's frenzy had quite left him. The old gentleman having a strong affection for his nephew, slew to embrace him, when clasping him in his arms: Can I, at last, (says he dearest nephew) enjoy the sweet consolation, of believing that you now have a due fense of the folly of your rambles? Don't deny any thing, my dear boy : "I've heard all.'--- Good Sir,' (replied Pharfamond, quite melted at his uncle's tenderness) 'I intend not to conceal the least circumstance from you. Clito has told you nothing but the truth, I heartily repent of what I have done I fee all my folly; but youth, and my too great e application to reading, had diffurbed my brain. Henceforward I'll attone, by the strict regularity of my conduct, for all the ridiculous actions I have committed. I have only one favour to beg, which is, that you will promife never to fpeak a word more about what has befallen me, My confession is a proof sufficient that I am duly fensible to my extravagance; fave me on-Iy from the confusion of hearing others discant upon it.'--- This I solemnly promise dear kinsman, (replied the uncle) I'll ever eraze the whole from my memory. All I wished for, was, that you might be restored to your fenses; and since you are so well recovered, the greatest pleasure I can find in the world, will be, to see you continue so. But permit me, (dear nephew,) to fay a word or two E 5 l us bernelenny

.

d

E.

n

c-

nt

" more to you on this head. You confess, that you owe your distraction to romances. Give them therefore all to me. But, (alas!) you perhaps may still wish to peruse them. Let me, then, commit them to the flames. Look upon them as a dangerous rock, against which you have already fplit. I'll put other books into your hands, which will both divert and inftruct you. Alas! I did not imagine that romances could have produced fuch fatal effects. On the other hand, I'll do all that lies in my power to procure you pleasure, for 'twill be necessary that you divert your self. Diversions will draw off your mind, from the attention you, so therwise, might be prompted to give to the fubjects which you have so eagerly studied. This. is the last time I'll ever speak to you on this matter, finde my renewing it would only give you a pain.

Pharfamond and his uncle embraced each other with the utmost tenderness, when tears started in the eyes of the latter. Colin, who, with the Tofter-father, had flaid at the door, overheard the whole conversation. So highly was he charm'd with the answer which Pharsamond made his uncle. that he was tempted to enter, in order to liften with the greater eafe; but, on hearing the conclusion of the uncle's discourse; and imagining that they were embracing, from certain fighs which the old gentleman vented, as he clasped his nephew in his arms; Colin, touched to the foul, with a tenderness, which he considered as Pharsamond's reconciliation, both to his uncle and to reason; Colin, (I say) affected with an action that reminded him of his own extravagance, burst open the door; when entering in, he took off his cap respectfully. And now like to those who are guided only by an unreserved zeal,

be threw himself at the uncle's feet, crying: O bleffed, bleffed gentleman I may heavens preferve you from all harm! Pity your life could s not be lafting as that of oaks ! Go, go, my good young mafter, (addressing himself to Pharlamond) 'embrace your dear uncle. Much rather would I fee all the princesses in the world; * and their knights, die in a garret, than behold a fingle hair fall from his veherable head. (1)

Colin continued these caresses, all the time he was speaking; and himself melting, in propertion as he endeavoured to melt others, he foon west alfo, when the uncle burft again into tears at this fight. Pharfamond, having a foul that was infinitely foft, wept likewise. Colin, surprized to find himself so much softened, and to have soft? ned others to fo great a degree, continued to weep for joy, at the pleasure he himself selt inforcing tears from his eyes. Their fenfibility was, at laft, fo great, that the uncle, the nephew and Colin, feethed but one. For now they embrace mutually, and fold their arms lovingly round each other; their tears are mixed as well as their carefies: in fhort, never was fo moving a spectacle. They all three continued, for a confiderable time, in this posture; but, at last, their fondness being quite exhausted, they broke one from the other; each wiping his eyes with a handkerchief he pulled out of his pocket. Ah! (eries Colin, wiping his cheeks) I never was so delighted in my whole life. I am not worth a fix-penny piece; and yet I would not for a shilling, but both your good kinsman and I had run mad, --- Scarce had Colin pronounced these words, when the foster-father, who had been below came to tell them dinner was ready. Pharfamond, hearing this, dreffed himfelf as fast as he could, when all three went down flairs. Paffin

Passing through one of the rooms, they met the nutle; upon which Colin, (his foul filled with the semains of tenderness,) ran to her with open arms. Good nurse, (cries he) let me embrace you, and be all animofity laid afide. I no longer think of my ears which you lugged to stout-! ly; do you on the other hand, forget my pul-! ling you by the nose.' --- 'I shall not be easy, 6 (fays the, drawing back) till they are both cut foff. How now vixen, (replies Colin) with your note as long as my arm.' --- 'Hold, (fays the faster-father) my wife is my wife; and her note is as good as your's, nay a much better. Farewel, (fays Colin, following Pharfamond and his uncle) 'I smell the dinner; I am your humble fervant, and that of your wife's nofe.'-Saying these words, they went into the parlour, when Pharfamond and his uncle fat down to table, Colin waiting upon them. Not long after the dinner was over, fome ferious company came to wait upon the uncle; when Pharfamond withdrew, fearing they fhould discourse about his adventure. The uncle, at Pharfamond's withdrawing, affured him, that he would foon fend them all away; after which they would go together and hunt a hare. Colin having also din'd, followed Pharfamond, who, spite of his uncle's endearments, and the strong desire he discovered to do every thing in his power to divert him, could not be merry. And now Pharfamond descending into a wide extending garden, Colin followed, when the former flopt under a bower, and there feated himself; Colin squatting down by his side. You feem in deep melancholy, (faid the latter) what is it you want?' --- Leave me, (faid Pharfamond) I am very much vexed with you. How came it into your head, to give my uncle a diffinel account of every thing which be-

I fel me?' Does your brain still run on these fooleries? (replied Colin.) 'Twas a mad. wouthful frolick of both of us." I am not fo angry, (continued Pharfamond) for what vou told concerning me, as I am for the refolution taken by my uncle to burn all my romances.' -- I don't fee any great harm in that, (replied Colin,) they'll suffer no pain on that occasion; for 'tis many years fince all the knights they treat of are dead.' --- 'That's nothing to the purpose, (replied Pharsamond) the perusal of their actions gives high pleasure. For my part, (fays Colin) I shall never relish this study more. Oons! they made your brains and mine run round like whirligiggs. Let us therefore bid adieu to all those wicked books; they certainly are of the devil's Invenstion.' - But tell me, Clito, (continued Pharfamond) will it not be possible for us to fave fome of them?' So, you are there again with your Clito, (replied Colin) but I'll go no more by that curfed name; call me plain Co-4 lin. But come let us change the discourse, and chat a little about your princess and mine." 4 The fweet creature !' (cried Pharfamond with a paffionate tone of voice) what would I give to fee her !'--- 'What a whimfical company were there of us? (fays Colin) we could not have made up one grain of fense among us all ; but on the other hand, we might have furnished I love enough for a whole city. To fay the truth, I should not be forry to see the chamber-maid e again. Had we all been living in the bleffed days of chivalry, that brifk girl would have become as great a lady as her mistress. Thrice happy for me, that I did not live in those times! for many a pint of blood should I have spile in her fervice, and got my ears cropt into the bars gain.

gain. 'Tis an ill wind that blows no body good, I am not a knight, but so much the better for · me. But now we are upon this subject, I should be glad to know how our ladies are in health? - But, ferioufly, Colin, (fays Pharfamond) would this give you any concern.' -- Not quite. fo much (replied Colin) as I should be about my supper, was I to be disappointed of it. But be: this as it will, I should be glad, for curiofity fake, to fee what fort of figure they make in our absence." Lam fensible, (says Pharsamond) that I was very filly to act the knight, and to confider my fair-one as a princes; but, f if we lay afide this circumstance, 'tis certain that no woman in the world deserves more to be beloved then Cedalifa; and I frankly confess, that I should be exceedingly glad to cultivate an acquaintance with her. I am fensible, that I shall be unhappy if I see her no more; it being impossible for me ever to forget her. Soons! you make me quite melancholy, (fays Colin) pray no more of these mournful subjects, for this brings Fatima to my memory. Methinks I again fee those fweet eyes of her's black as a coal. The poor girls! they furely must be run distracted. Let us beseech heaven to restore their fenses; for this can never be done without a miracle. failed and the transcordings.

They are conversing in this manner, when the foster-father came running, to inform Pharsamond that all the company was gone, and that his uncle waited for him to go a sporting. Pharsamond ranimmediately to his uncle, during which Colin went and saddled a horse for him. Soon after they had lost sight of the mansion, they met with other hunters, and joined company with them. And now, an unusual gaiety sparkled in Pharsamond's countenance; which the old gentleman perceiving, considered

confidered it as a proof of his kinfman's perfect recovery. But alas! these were all fallacious. glimmerings; the gaiety which appeared in Pharfamond, arifing folely from the delight he felt ins being in the fields, and paffing through woods onhorseback. These frantic ideas owed their rise to this dangerous pleasure; and his frenzy, which had only disappear'd for one day, revived again, almost insensibly, in his brain. At the smallest thicket he met with, he would feel a fecret temptation to enter it, there to mufe at leifure. This temptation was, as yet, rifen to no greater height. than merely to give his heart a pleafing fenfation, He was in this frame of mind, when a brace of hares flarted at the fame time; and divided the foortimen; each of whom followed that hare: which was nearest to him. In the hate of the chace, the old gentleman, who was as much: charm'd with the fight of a hare, as Pharfamond could have been at that of Cedalifa; the uncle (I fay) loling fight of his kinfman, gave himfelf up .. entirely to the pleasure of the chace. As for Pharfamond, he followed the other division of sportsmen without once minding which way the old gentleman went. Colin followed Pharfamond. when both entering a forest, every one struck into the first path he met with. That which Pharfamond and Colin took, led them far from the fort; and carried them, after a quarter of an: hour's rambling, near to a small mansion, beautiful as it was possible for art and nature united to render it. Pharfamond was inchanted with the structure of this little box, and no less charmed with the delicious foot on which it flood; whence he concluded, that the owner of it must needs be a person of exquisite taste. Which way soever he turned his eyes, he law lovely frenes, in thore

every charm of rural nature. Here nothing was heard but the sweet melody of birds; the leaves of the trees were fanned by the foftest zephyrs; and fuch a calm reigned univerfally, as diffused itself even to the soul. The beauty of these scenes, was heightened by the sweet remembrance of Cedalisa, which was imagined this instant, to his fancy. - 'O Clito !' fays he, (turning about to his fquire) ' what an inchanting spot is this! can any one in the whole compass of nature, better fuit the mind of an amorous knight, if yet there can be any fuch? Have we not here a fine picture of the folitary recesses, in which those famous lovers used to stop, either to repose themfelves, or follow fome unknown fair-one, to whom chance had directed them. Here let us · lie down, (my dear Clito) and imitate those renowned heroes: perhaps we may be the only perfons fince those knights, whom chance has conducted hither.' - Saying thess words, Pharsamond, as an example to Clito, alighted from his horse. Let us leave them there an instant; (for methinks I hear my reader enquire, by this time, after the uncle, whom we left in eager pursuit of a hare; though the reader might have conducted him back home, had I my felf forgot to do fo.) I really don't know of any adventure he has met with, worthy to break in upon the course of the incidents, which, henceforward, will relate wholly to Pharfamond. However, as this may be thought necessary, I shall observe, that the chace being ended, the company met; when the old gentleman perceiving in an instant, that his kinsman was not there, every one ran as eagerly in fearch of him, as they had before in pursuit of the hare. They called him by his name, they founded all their horns; but alas! unhappily for the old gentleman,

they were for ever going farther and farther from the place whither chance had conducted Pharfamond. They all met together at the rendezvous appointed, but without discovering the least footsleps of our knight; and the only refult of their random expedition was, that the greatest part of them almost killed their horses. They therefore were all obliged to return home. The old gentleman was fo ftrongly affected with an accident, which succeeded so suddenly to the short pleasure he enjoyed, that he had scare power to lead his horse. The sportsmen who had shared with him in the chace, returned also to their respective houses, after dividing the dead game among themselves. And now the afflicted uncle rode towards his own house; and I think it needless to observe, that he figh'd and groaned all the way. The nurse being at the door as he entered the court-yard, darted forward to help her mafter to alight. - ' But where's my fon, good ' Sir ?' (fays she to the old gentleman.) - Woe. is me! (replied he,) my poor nurse, I shall never fet eyes on him again; he is irrecoverably loft.' - What a lamentable thing this is ! (replied she, taking down the game from the horse's crupper;) What charming game is here! Ah " me! my poor boy won't eat a bit of it!

After these words, the old gentleman, who by this time was alighted, went into his house, where I shall leave him with the nurse, who will not fail to wipe away his tears, or mix her's with his; and return to Pharsamond, whom I will no more lose sight of; and whose story will be much more entertaining, than the detail of the sighs and ground with which the uncle's house eccho'd.

The End of the second PART.



PHARSAMOND.

grader com PART III.

THARSAMOND, afterfully contemplating the beauties of the place he was then in ;- Chito, fays he) I have a firong inclination to enquire whom this house belongs to. 'Tis so delightful, and the foot on which it flands is to peculiarly enchanting, that it must needs be the abode of some hapless lover, who has entirely loft the hopes of being ever bleft again with the fight of his miftres; and who chose this delicious solitude, there to figh and abandon himself entirely to his forrow. What multitudes are made unhappy by love! I myfelf may, perhaps, be one day a still greater object of pity! Dear, dear Cedalifa! alas! these places, (the daily confidants of the pangs of the person who inhabits them,) increase my fondness, and the grief I feel at being torn from you.' - ' How ! is Cedalifa again brought on the carpet? (fays Clito) For heaven's fake, good Sir, let us move off; the Devil must be somewhere hereabouts, and tempting us both. I myself also feel, I know onot how; these confidants, as you call the debightful scenes round us; this verdure, these trees,

trees, the gentle breeze which wantons through them; these several things, I will frankly confefe, tickle my heart no less than they do your's. My sweetest Fatima! had it not been for that old crone your miftress, and the base manner in which the turned us out of doors, I should be again tempted to be my worthy mafter's fquire. · It must be owned, that love has fomething vast-· ly delightful in it. Faith and troth, my heart is fo noble, that I cannot think I ever wore wooden shoes. But, Sir, once again, remember the box o'the ear I received; the affronts you your-· felf met with; the fondness of your poor uncle, on whose soul heaven have merey; for, should · we flay here any longer, I shall conclude him a. dead man. Remember my broken head, and the cords with which I was bound. All thefe ware most feandalous incidents. I am as defindus. as you can be, to mitate our heroes of romance; but, unluckily, we came four hundred years too late. Be therefore advised, and let us go away. · Hunger will inevitably feize us in this forest; wo are not acquainted with a foul in this house; and we shall perhaps be taken for thieves. My dear, fweet mafter! feturn to your wits. Tis now late; a good supper waits for us; let us take advantage of the appetite we should naturally have by this time, and employ it as one means to refift temptation; our appetite was given us, (by Heaven,) for no other purpose. Tell me, are not you yourself vally hungry?" - Away, away, Clito, (interrupted Pharlamond, with an air intoxicated by love ;) 4 return back to my " uncle, and fay, thou knowest not what is become of me. I won't force thee to flay here. against thy will. If the lives of those illustrious.

men; who were diffinguished from the herd of mortals, by their noble flame and their exalted fentiments: If the honour with which they were attended; if their remembrance, which still exists, cannot once move thy heart, 'twill be vain for me to attempt it. Like me, like mighty Pharfamond, they foar'd above that groveling conduct which leads to oblivion. They made choice, in love, of fuch objects as were worthy of ingroffing their hearts; and their tenderness made them what they were. My heart is of the fame cast with theirs. The object on whom I bestowed it, merits my whole adoration. Cedalifa shall know every part of my merit on this occasion; and I hope to be one day as much indebted to her, as those famous knights were to their princesses. Leave me; I don't hold thee; return back to thy brother clowns; and, if thy heart is insensible to the greatness with which I would inspire thee, leave me alone in this place. Heaven will, I doubt not, foon throw into my way a man, worthy to fill up the post thou refusest.' - Pharsamond, after saying these words, turned about towards the house, when he feemed rais'd to extasy. Clito had been strongly affected by his mafter's words; but his too recent return to the uncle's house, the stomach he had got in hunting, and which was one of the greatest obstacles to the fecret inclination he had to follow Pharfamond; the remembrance of the shocking adventures they had both met with; these several things clashed so much with his refolution, that good fense was very near prevailing on this occasion. But, alas! the poor fellow could not avoid his deftiny; and he was formed to be the inseparable squire of the illfated Pharfamond. Heaven had made choice of him 40000

ra

ly

him to be the illustrious partner of the misfortunes of this new knight; and his brain, already strongly prepoffessed in favour of romantic love, was not of fo happy a texture, as to be directed by what was right. Nevertheless, one would have concluded, at first, that Clito's reason, or rather his fear, would have got the ascendant - Farewel then, (fays he to Pharfamond, taking off his hat) ' farewel, my dear, dear master; fince you are not afraid, either of being flarved, or of the drubbings you may meet with, from persons not knowing who you are. Farewel. 'Tis not in my power to hold out here any longer. · I'll e'en return home, and there die with grief. But I folemnly promise you, to forfake all company for your fake; and to treasure up for ever, ' in my mind, the inftructions with which you ' favoured me. Should you happen to meet Fatima in your travels, my compliments to her, and fay, that I'll never forget her; that I wish both her lady, and yourfelf, a principality; and that, fhould this happen, I defire that notice may be fent me of it, in order that I may go and marry her. Pray don't fail to give her my direction : for fear of mistake, tell her, when she writes the superscription, to word it thus; To her haples lover, Mr. Clito, fadder than an owlyellower than faffron, and leaner than the confumptive horse in our stable; living in a little room joining to the kitchen, which I shall now make my abode. Twill not be possible to mistake. Adieu, my dear, dear Sir; permit me, before I go, to embrace you.

Clito, after he had ended this lamentable had rangue, clasped his master, who was now so fondly wrapt in extasy, that he became quite insensible to this tender separation. The squire wept, and sigh'd

0

3

y

16

16

1-

of

m

far inferior to his. Clito, the instant this young man appeared, was struck with no less affection for him, than Pharfamond had been for his mafter. The young man, and Clito, furveyed each other attentively; for Clito, tho' born in a village. and among pealants, yet made a tolerable good appearance in his way. His countenance was fresh and sprightly; and, spite of the irregularity of his features, which, fingly, were homely enough; vet the whole together formed a comic face, that diverted the beholders, without exhibiting any thing disagreeable. After some compliments had passed, with the greatest politeness, on each side; they went up into an apartment, that was furnished with an elegant simplicity, suitable to the natural beauties of this delicious solitude.

Methinks I now hear fome critic object: - This seems to promise an adventure of the heroic kind. You are deviating from the cast of your subject: we expect comic incidents; and this opening does not feem to offer any thing of that fort.—The critic is right in the main; for I should not have attempted a description of the adventure in question. The comic part of it may, perhaps, not please; I say, perhaps, for I'll do all I can to make it agreeable. However, 'twould have argued more prudence in me, not to have run any hazard on this occasion. Hence I have half a mind to blot out the firokes I have writ above. What fays my reader? - 'Tis a good thought. - But hold; this would be an additional trouble, and I dread every thing of that kind. I'll therefore proceed. Must I, (good Mr. Critic,) be obliged to furnish you, always, with subjects for laughter, because I have done this several times? I beg you to forgive me in this respect. I myself am delighted with variety. Follow me, therefore, (gentle reader;)

reader;) I will be so ingenuous as to confess, that I don't well know whither I am going; but then the journey will give pleasure. We are now in a solitude, let us e'en stay there some time. We'll afterwards do our best, to get ourselves out of it,

as well as our various personages.

Y

ut

1

re

ed

er,

ou

de-

atle

r ;)

The anchoret naturally imagined that our ramblers wanted repose. You must needs be fatigued, (fays he to them;) To that I'll take my leave of you till supper-time." - The only anfwer that Pharfamond made the mafter, at his going away, was a low bow; when our knight continued with no one but his most worthy squire. Pharfamond past, at first, some moments in meditation, with his eyes turned towards heaven. This dumb language was heightened by certain fighs; and he concluded with the following exclamation, in honour of his peerless Cedahsa. - 'In vain, " (said he,) dear princess, are endeavours used, to make me obliterate my woes. My fad heart is ' insensible to all things but the despair of having · loft you!' - Be not Idear Sir, fays Clito, ihterrupting him,) fo foon buried in contemplation; and talk a little with me. The mafter of this house, must be a worthy gentleman. Pray what do you think of him? Did we but know where our fair-ones are at this time, we would write to them to come to us.'- In how vulgar a strain dost thou express thyself! (replied Pharfamond;) and why interrupt me fo difrespectfully? Can'ft thou be ignorant, that it no way becomes a squire, to speak to his master with so little ceremony. It should be thy delight, to observe religiously a proper decorum with regard to me; instead of which, thou breakest in upon the fweet pleasures I emoy, in devoting my whole foul to fondness: but let me tell thee, it VOL. I.

8

is no ways proper thou should'st be so free with me. Call to mind who I am, and what thou

thyself art; and let me abandon myself wholly to my passion.' — You ought surely (says

Clito,) to overlook these small faults, as we

have been engaged so very short a time in our profession. Permit me to go on. I am delight-

ed with the sport, and you'll soon find me an ex-

cellent squire. I'll disturb you no more. Make as many way faces as you please; I'll sit apart in

yon chair, and gaze upon you in order to learn.

Clito, after this discourse, withdrew respectfully from Pharfamond. Our knight was overjoyed at the fituation they were both going to be in. He first darted a glance at Clito, to see whether he sat in a proper attitude; after which, leaning one of his arms on the table, and letting the other hang carelesty on his side; he exerted his utmost endeavours, to imitate the manner of fuch famous, knights, as happened to be at a distance from their mistresses - 'Tis in vain, (cried he) that fate pursues me; I'll pass my whole life, (dearest prince(s!) in fearthing after, and in loving thee!'-His words were fometimes interrupted by fighs. Clito, as he listened to his master, melted by insensible degrees. He fancied that no knight in the whole universe, could be a more perfect master of the paffion of love. The squire could not once take his eyes from him. His strong attention awaking, at last, all his tenderness, and inspiring him with fentiments truly heroie; he, at first, mixed some fighs with those vented by his master. This tender enthusiasm increased; and after that Pharsamond had ended an exclamation begun by him, our heroic Clito, forgetting himfelf, began likewife; I do not fay, to speak, but to declaim as follows,

r I'H

follows, with a thundering voice. - ' Sweet Mademoiselle Fatima! (for fate, still more jealous than Satan, will not permit you to be a princess yet; however, I doubt not but that you'll be a princess one time or other;) my absence from you, is death to me; and was it not for a bleffed appetite, that heaven gave me, and which I befeech it to preserve; your poor, your wretched lover would have been in his grave by this time. Alas! when will my eyes be again bleffed with the fight of you? Why have the cruel destinies separated us? But I will feek you with so much attention, that though you should be hid under twenty truffes of fraw; and I be forced to cufa million of old harridans, such as Dame Margaret; though I should be whipped like a top; banged like an afs, or have both my legs and arms broke: you shall see me overjoyed, tho' a cripple, and maimed in every part of my body, as this will be for your honour and glory: all this I vow, I protest, I fwear, by the most beautiful romance I ever read in my life.

During this noble exclamation, Pharfamond, whose contemplation the squire had broken in upon, listened to him with the most patient astonishment. The moment he had done speaking:

But, my good friend, Clito, (says he.) how

e

le

ke g,

th

ne

n-

(a-

m, ke-

W5,

But, my good friend, Clito, (fays he,) how frangely you forget yourself! Go, go, and bellow in the court-yard.'— 'Stay a moment, '(fays Clito, in a solemn tone of voice;) I shall foon have done; but there is still something upon my heart, which I must out with.'—' Hold

your nonsense, (cries Pharsamond;) and if you can't keep in that clack, leave me; for I won't

be plagu'd with your company any longer.'—
A moment's patience more, good Sir, (replied

the squire;) since you are in such surious hafte,

I'll lop off what I had to fay, the' I can affure you, that the cream was all to come. But I might as well have not uttered a word, were I not to breathe a few fighs. I defire no more time than just to vent exactly four; and furely you, who have exhaled above a thousand, cannot think these too many. A little more time then, I befeech you.' - Clito, faying these words, endeavoured to draw a few fad groans from his harmonious throat; when the young anchoret entered their chamber, and deprived Clito of the Iweet delight of fighing. -- Good, my lord, (faid he to Pharfamond,) come and take fome refreshment: I'll do all that lies in my power, to recover you from the deep melancholy in which you feem'd plung'd.'—— Generous unknown, (replied Pharsamond) the attention you are fo good as to bestow on me, claims an eternal acknowledgement; but I folemnly declare, that I love you still more, from sympathy than grati-* tude.' --- Clito was going to return him thanks in his way, when Pharfamond perceiving this, darted such a look on his prattling squire, as obliged him to hold his tongue. They then went down into a parlour, the extreme neatness of which made magnificence unnecessary. A moment after supper was served up, when Pharlamond and the anchoret fat down at table. Clito. perceiving that not the least notice was taken of him, crept foftly towards our knight and whifpered him thus: - ' I beg your advice, (sweet Sir,) for I really know not how to act. Shall I fit down to table, or eat at the fide-board? for I don't find a word relating to this in any of our books.' - 'Thou imprudent wretch! (cried F Pharfamond,) begone, and trouble me no more. real fact real med in fact taglages have

Well, (cries Clito, so loud as to be overheard,) honour is infinitely preferable to a fupper. It shall never be said that a squire supoed in the kitchen. This is a matter of infinite consequence.'—The anchoret heard impersectly what Clito faid; when imagining that he did not care to eat with the servants, he ordered a napkin to be spread for him in the same room. That infant the young man, who feemed to be the anchoret's companion, came in. "If 'tis fo,' (faid Clito, the moment he perceived him,) ' you'll be ' kind as to keep me company; our reckoning will be as good as that of others.'-The anchoret then nodded to the young man, to accept of the invitation; after which they ferved them at a frde-table.

,

e

al

at

i-

cs

S,

as

nt

of

10-

fa-

to,

of

red

it.)

Isit

or I

our

ried

ore.

Vell,

I know not whether decorum will permit our strollers to talk; for it will be no easy matter to give them time to eat and speak together; I myfelf know, that it was always a difficult talk for me to do both at once. But then, (will it be" faid) nothing is more common than for people to chat at table; and you may, without injuring their appetites in any manner, put fuch discourse into their mouths as good manners may require. I therefore stall consent to let them speak a few words, I myself not being fond of long conversations on these occasions. And now, methinks I' fee Pharfamond with his eyes fixed and wrapt in contemplation, forgetting that he fits with his fork uplifted; whilft Clito, hungry as a hound, employs both his hands at once, that he may lofe no time. - Every thing is excellent, (cried he each " moment) your cook must be a very clever fellow.' Had our knight-errants of romance met with fuch, they would have fpent more time in eating than in musing. — The young man gazed F 3 with

with admiration at our squire's activity .- " Bravo! (cries he,) good Mr. Squire, fince you are fuch.' - That I am, by my troth, (replied he;) but I paid dear for my title. If you'll but hear me, · I'll inform you of every thing about it, the mo-" ment after I shall have dispatched what is before

· me.'

Whilst that Clito utter'd (all the time he was chewing) a parcel of unmeaning words; the young anchoret, after having long paid a regard to Pharfamend's meditations, resolved to interrupt them. - My lord, (fays he,) I must beseech you to calm your transports. The forrow to which I perceive you are become a prey, affects me exceedingly. I myfelf cannot forbear fympathizing with the unfortunate; and my own lucke less condition induces me to pity you.' — ' My * fate, (replies our knight,) is wretched; whence LI hope you'll forgive me, if I yield to the me-· lancholy which fits brooding over me, spite of the great civilities I am honoured with by you. But then the cause of my melancholy is so natua ral, that you could not forbear pitying me still more, was I to inform you of it.' --- 'I hope (replied the anchoret,) that you will be so good as to acquaint me with the cause of your grief; and I, in return, will make you the confidant of mine. I nevertheless would have you believe, that 'tis not fo much curiofity that prompts me to enquire into your misfortunes, as a warmth of · friendship for you, with which I was inspired the first moment I saw you.' - ' The great esteem, (says Pharsamond,) you discover for me, gives • me infinite pleasure; and this alone would be capable of eafing my heart, could it admit of the least consolation. And give me leave, on the

the other hand, to affure you, that you cannot

possibly revere me more than I do you.'

Enough, enough, I am quite tired with these infipid compliments with which these romances are larded. Pharfamond and the anchoret shall put a truce to theirs. They have been almost an hour at table; at least I intended they should continue fo long there. 'Tis therefore high time that they withdraw; and I shall make them end their meal, after we have listened a moment to Clito, who has quite lost his appetite. Let us talk away, my good friend, (fays the squire:) I shall not now be at a loss for words. Tell me, (adds "Clito;) are you not fome captain who are retired hither to fatten yourfelf again next campaign? the winter-quarters here are excellent; and would be complete, had we but women 'about us. - 'Alas! Mr. Squire, (replied the voung man,) we reside in this house for a very different reason. - Faith and troth (replied Clito) 'I'd gladly live in it, without any reason at all. 'You are vastly good-natur'd; your company is most delightful, (fays the young man;) and I affure you, that I shall be infinitely better pleased with this abode, if you will be but fo kind as to ffay with us.'-- 'I am very much obliged to you, (fays Colin;) had I eat less, I could have thanked you in a much better manner; but I am almost choaked, so pray let me take a little breath.' -- ' Are you always fo merry, (con-' tinued the young man,) as now?' - ' Indeed am ' I, (replies Clito;) I am never out of temper, except on Ash-wednesday, on vigils, and during Lent; but at all other times, I am wakeful as a clock. But now I am speaking of clocks, do you go to bed early here?'- This is left to every one's ' pleasure, (said the young man.)' - ' A charming

e

S

of

u

18

\$0160K

house ! (cries the squire ;) may those who built it, as well as all who relide here, live for ever. - Do you also make love sometimes?'-· We should do so, (continued Clito) if this were necessary, but we have not even one woman among us. Fy! (replied Clito;) 'twas very wrong of you not to provide against this want; it being impossible that your family should last any time, as it confifts of none but men. But what was I going to fay farther? give me some account of the life you lead in this place. Handfome as you are, you furely must have been teiz'd almost to death by the waiting-maids. But tell me, are you not acquainted with a certain brunette, neither fat nor lean, tall nor fhort, named Mademoiselle Fatima? - I don't know any fuch person, replied the young man. During the twelve months that we have dwelt in this folitude, we have feen none but a few sportsmen, who, now and then, were flung out of the chace.' I am overjoyed, (replied · Clito,) that you know nothing about her; for I must be so frank as to declare, that you would be a very improper acquaintance for this in-chanting creature. Why fo? (faid the young man.) 'I could inform you why, continued the squire;) and you shall be told the reason of this to-morrow. But you observed to me, that solks, in this house, go to bed when they please; and you know that my eyes begin to draw straws; so that, in case my bed be made, I'll run into it this moment.' -You feem in vast haste, (said the young man;) but 'tis not late yet.' — 'Your clock, (said · Clito,) must certainly go too slow; but my eyes are, to me as a dial: when they shut, it must be mid-night. - Good night to you: 'twill be day light to-morrow. Scarce

Scarce had Clito pronounc'd these last words, but Pharfamond and the anchoret rofe from table, in which they did well; for Clito, had his tongue run on, would not have known what he faid.-Sir,' (faid the anchoret to the knight,') if you have no inclination to go to bed yet, there is a little garden hard by; fo that, if you think proper, we'll go and take a turn in it. Solitude, filence, and night, fuit perfons whose souls are a prey to grief; and they perhaps, may ad-' minister some pleasure to you.'- I wish for no other pleasure, (replied Pharsamond, venting a deep figh,) than that which I shall enjoy by means of your company; and fince you are fo kind as to let me share as much of it as I please, I will endeavour to converse with you as long as ' I can.'-Saying these words, they both went into the garden; when the young man conducted Clito to the chambers, where beds were prepared for them; and our fquire, after embracing his guide, in return for the excellent meal with which he had been favour'd, got to bed as fast as possible, in order to digest his meal with the greater ease.

Pharfamond and our anchoret walk'd some moments, without opening their lips. The knight proceeded with a solemn peace, and stopt by intervals. The anchoret then, surveying him attentively, was struck with the most tender compassion—How extreme must this poor gentleman's misfortunes be! (said he softly, to himself.)

By this time they were advanced infenfibly into a walk, whose gloom recovered Pharsamond from his profound contemplation.— 'I would do all 'that lies in my power, (said the anchoret) to 'calm your woes; and if the relation of those I feel, can suspend them ever so little, I am ready

d

es

ft

e

CC

F 5 to

to inform you of all things relating to myself, provided this may be agreeable. You possibly will hear incidents which may surprize you, and be highly worthy of your curiosity.'—' The beholding of you only,' (excellent Sir, replied Pharsamond) will persuade every one, that the relation of your adventures must be something very extraordinary. Amiable as you are, in every respect, we easily guess the cause of your woe; and surely, love only can russe the mind of so very deserving a gentleman.' You say true, (replied the anchoret;) that passion alone, has, like the canker-worm, prey'd on my youthside me your attention, I'll now begin my mournful story.'



Analy Aniv Tests

WINGER FOR

respect to the training to be under



THE

S T O R Y

OFTHE

ANCHORET.

Have lived a year in this folitude : but before I tell you the motives for my refiding in it, give me leave to inform you of my birth. A young man of quality, Tarmino by name, who dwelt usually in a country feat near Paris, faw a gentlewoman at a friend's house whom he went to visit. Being struck with the beauties of her person, he enquired who she was; when his friend replied, that the was daughter to a gentleman, who died some time before in the army : and that she lived with her mother, in an adjacent village. He added, that as his daughter had contracted a friendship with this young gentlewoman, she had prevailed with her to spend some time at his house; and he concluded with observing, that she was in very unhappy circumstances. Tarmino was overjoy'd to hear of her being well born. He came, on the morrow, to pay his friend another visit, when he found an opportunity of speaking to the young gentlewoman, whom I shall call Perfiana. Tarmino was finely shap'd, sweet temper'd, and had a most amiable countenance. He then reveal'd to Persiana, the impression she had made on his

his heart; and fooke this with fo graceful, fo perfualive an air, that the Perfiana, did all the could, to conceal the inclination the had for him; the yet could not forbear mewing, by her answer, that the was not intentible to his pation. A fecond interview compleated the conquest of the restraint which the, for the fake of prudence and decency, had put on her heart. And now Tarmino open'd his whole foul, and addressed her, not as a miftress for whom he had some regard, but as one whom he lov'd and respected; and wish'd might be joyn'd with him, in the bands of wedlock. This was fo very advantageous a match for the unhappy Perfiana; and his perfon was fo exceedingly engaging, that she could no longer conceal her fentiments; nor forbear to hint, how much he was dear to her. Hitherto she had made only half a discovery; but, at last, so far from hiding her flame, the reveal'd it fully. This declaration was made in to unaffected a manner, as gave it infinite charms; and Tarmino was thereby much more sentible of the value of the heart which the fairone devoted to him. His father was still living, who, being a morose and covetous old man, the youth could not flatter himself with the hopes, that his parent would any way approve of the choice he had made; the riches he poffes'd being a great obstacle to it. Neverthelels, Tarmino prevail'd with some friends to found him; but the old gentleman always return'd fuch answers, as made the youth despair of ever obtaining his consent. Our lover inform'd his mistress of the mighty remoras he met with to their happinels; when his fincerity, and the rectitude of all his actions, increased Persiana's flame. Nothing but fallhood, in a paffion built on esteem, can lessen the delight found in loving. Tarmino, charm'd with the unvarying fondness his mistress discover'd for him, was refolv'd

foly'd to address his father. On this occasion he employ'd intreaties, fubmissions, and tears; in Mort, every thing which was thought capable of mollifying the old man, but all to no purpole ; and the latter was even upon the point of commanding his fon to never fee her more. What a grief must this be to a lover, who knows no other felicity, than that of being joyn'd for ever to the fair-one who forms his whole delight! Tarmino and Perfranz foent, fecretly, fome days in mixing their fond tears; when these affecting circumstances inflaming their passion, they resolved to the nuptial knot, whatever might be the confequence. Love on fuch occasions, fets aside, and erazes the remembrance of the usual formalities; and truth. joyn'd with honour, are commonly thought to be riches fufficient. However, they found means to win over Tarmino's friend to their interest; and the private chapel of this friend was the place where this fond pair, intoxicated with the joy of adoring each other, bound themselves, by the most folemn ties, to retain a reciprocal love lo long as life should last.

Their nuptials were known only to three perfons besides themselves; and they spent three months, in such a manner, as made their friends and acquaintance imagine, that their late passion was sunk to indifference. But now Persiana inform'd Tarmino of an accident common to a new married woman, upon which proper care was taken to conceal Persiana's pregnancy. She afterwards brought forth a child, which she naturally concluded to be in safety; firmly relying on the oath whereby Tarmino had bound himself to her, at the foot of the facred altar.

Tarmino's valet de chambre, who was one of the three witnesses to the marriage, had formerly liv'd as a servant with his father. The old gentle-

man, on occasion of some whispers, question'd this domestick; and, to engage him to discover the whole fecret, promis'd not only to fettle an annuity upon him, but likewife to give him a confiderable sum of money beforehand. This valet de chambre was base enough to accept of the bribe: and had inform'd the old gentleman, of all he knew, a few days before Perfiana's delivery. The father would hear no more. He now feign'd to be kindly reconciled to a thing, which, being done, could not be undone. Upon this he sent for his fon, when, after flightly reprimanding him for taking such a step against his express consent, he declared to him, that, fince he was married, he would forgive him. The old man went fuch lengths in his hypocrify, as even to order his fon to introduce his wife to him. The fon obey'd, when the deceitful father conceal'd, under the veil of kindness and humanity, a barbarous design which he was then meditating against the off-spring of our fond couple.

I myself don't know all the steps he took, in order to put his wicked design in execution; but a fortnight after Persiana's delivery, her child disappeared on a fudden, but by what accident no one could tell. The nurse vanish'd at the same time; a circumstance which plung'd Tarmino and Persiana into the extremes of despair. The former made every enquiry possible; his fearch was universal, but all in vain, for not a word could he hear concerning his dear infant. He then complained to his father; and, in the height of his anguish, proceeded fo far as to fay, that he only could have been guilty of fo horrid a deed. The old man pretended to be exasperated against his son; and carried his refentment fo far, as to threaten to get his marriage diffolved. He was as good as his word,

' the

word, he taking all the measures necessary for that

purpole.

Not long after, and at the time that the father was pursuing this affair with vigour, he was taken ill, and snatch'd out of the world. Tarmino, spite of his father's severity and ill usage, having naturally a tender heart, was affected at the old man's death. His care now was, (after burying his parent) to solemnize his nuptials publickly, and with the due formalities. He then rewarded very liberally all his father's late servants, in hopes that some one of them would be able to inform him, concerning his father's contrivance in getting the child off, and the place where the latter then was. But the old gentleman had manag'd this affair with such privacy, that not one of them could give him the least light into it.

Tarmino and Persiana were inconsolable at this loss; and near eighteen years passed away, without their having any other off-spring. During this interval, the infant, who was carried off, had been brought up in a place about fifty miles from their country seat, at a farmer's, whose wise took care of the child. I will not inform you how Tarmino's father came to hear of this sarmer; let it suffice when I tell you, that I was this child, and that

I am a woman.

n

g

10

3

er

11-

ar

ed

h,

ave

an

and

get

his

ord,

Pharfamond, struck with amazement at these words, cried: — 'How! you are not a man!'— I am not indeed, Sir, (replied the anchoret;) and you shall soon be told the motives for my assuming this disguise.— 'Heavens!' (cried our knight,) enraptured with an adventure that abounded with the marvellous; and which approach'd him, (as it were) to those ages, of the renown'd knights, who frequently met with the like;) 'Heavens! how furprizing is the sate of some men! But go on, '(lovely semale stranger;) I am impatient to know

the conclusion of fo remarkable a flory.'- The fair anchoret then proceeded in manner following, After spending three years at the farmer's to whose care I had been committed, chance directed to our village, a company of ladies and gentlemen; and my foster-father rented some lands under one of the latter. This farmer had a pleafant garden, which the whole company chose to dine in; thinking that fo delightful a spot wou'd add to the pleasures of their repast. I was in the garden when they all came in. Now it happen'd, that one of those ladies, the Countess of * * * *, who was advanc'd in years, and had no children; fpying me, alk'd my fofter-father whether I was his daughter? He replied very naturally, that I was not, and went on as follows. - I really don't know who are her parents. A certain fum was given me, three years fince, to take charge of her: and a promise made that she should be sent for away foon. As no one came for that purpole, charity and compation prompted me to keep her, and to treat her exactly as I do my own children .-The farmer after this frank declaration, fet forth, in too favourable a light, certain good qualities I possessed; all which, (he declared) seem'd to prognotticate that I should one day be a most amiable woman. The whole company look'd upon this adventure as very fingular, upon which they began to discourse with me; and 'twas (very probably) the extraordinary circumstance with regard to my birth, which struck the lady in question so greatly in my favour. She then took me in her arms; when the was fo partial, as to fancy I hould one day be very handsome, and seem'd quite inchanted with my behaviour. To make short, she told the ladies and gentlemen round her, that the would take me to her house, where she would bring

bring me up, and treat me in the same manner as if I had been her daughter.—The farmer confented to part with me; but not (as I was informed afterwards) without some regret. The counters, to console the good peasant, gave him some money; and, the repast being ended, she took me in her coach, and carried me to her seat, sixteen miles

from this place.

d

0

er

d

1+

10

ne

ld

I lived with this lady till I was feventeen. 'Twere needless to tell you, that in changing (as it were) my mafter, my carriage and habits chang'd by insensible degrees; such an education being bestow'd upon me, as fuited the daughter of a person of the first rank. The our house was twelve miles from the nearest town, I yet was waited upon by singing and dancing mafters; and the progress I made under both, made the counters extremely well pleas'd with the care the took in bringing me up. For many years I imagin'd myself her daughter, the always calling me fuch, without once hinting at the manner in which she had taken me from the farmer's; and all the fervants in the house were order'd, upon pain of being turn'd away, not to give me the least information as to this matter. Education had inspir'd me with that tenderness for the old lady, which children usually have for a mother; but chance, in whose disposal I always was, at last acquainted me with every thing to which I had fo long been a stranger.

During the whole time that I have been speaking of, all the people in the neighbourhood of my good lady, were wholly taken up with diversions and sports of various kinds. 'Twas now an universal holiday, and every one was employ'd in forming new parties of pleasure. I was then near fixteen, and could boast some little beauty. A great number of persons, of various ranks, had already presented themselves

to me as fuitors; but none of these had yet made fo ftrong an impression, as to make me sensible that I had a heart to bestow. They would divert me, indeed, but without affording me any real joy; whilft I, without discovering the least preference for any one in particular, treated them all in fuch a manner, as did not bereave them of the hopes, that they might one day touch my heart; and this hope caused them to rack their inventions for new subjects of delight, merely to entertain me. The good lady to whom I had fuch obligations, was overjoyed at my prudent conduct on every occasion; and I obeyed her implicitly in all things. The great regard I paid to her advice, increased still more her fondness for me; but the time was drawing near, when I should violate, on occasion of a luckless passion, the exact obedience I had till then, shewn to all her commands.

. Among these various diversions in which I shared perpetually, my gallants proposed acting a tragedy, and infifted that I should play the principal female character. The novelty of this entertainment pleased every one; and it being mentioned to the countes, she consented to it at once. The parts were then given out to us, the chief whereof, were a prince and princess, who, being ftruck with a violent passion for each other; a jealous king at whose palace they were then supposed to be, endeavoured to separate them by forcible methods. The part of the princess was put: into my hands; on which occasion I was defired to name, among the feveral young gentlemen of our acquaintance, the person whom I should defire, might act the prince. I gigled at this propofal, and begged I might be allowed, till the morrow, before I determined; and laughing on, added that, in order to chuse with the greater justice,

justice, it would be necessary that all such young gentlemen as might be candidates for the part, should meet next day at our house; and that then, after my furveying them at leifure, either heaven or my own heart would inspire me in so important a choice as was that of a lover. countels was present at this conserence, and every one laughed at my declaration. All the young gentlemen who met at our house, became, from that instant, much more affiduous in their addresfes; but I declared, that I would not fuffer my felf to be prejudiced in favour of any one, till the moment should happen, which was to determine both that person's fate and mine. This declaration, which was pronounced with the fame air as I had affumed at first, put an end to their feveral addresses, and now their eyes only employed all their art, in order to obtain the preference, (if possible) by their filent language; and afterthe company had debated long enough on my proposal, and the answer I made, I was called upon to. keep my promise. The hour of assembly was agreed upon, after which they all retired to their respective homes.

As foon as we were returned to our house, the countess asked whether I spoke seriously, when I had engaged to give the preference to one young gentleman. I replied, that I only joked, and would be far from executing what I had promised. That though I should be forced to declare for one in particular, I did not know which of them to point out, as they all pleased me alike; or in other words, were equally indifferent to me.

She applauded me for entertaining so prudent a resolution; adding, that if the young gentlemen should insist upon my declaring, I should say, that

my pretended choice was made merely at random; and to divert the company; and that I should be greatly puzzled, was I forced to give the preference to one, among a fet of gentlemen whose merit was equal. I affored the countess. that I would pay the most exact obedience to her commands: but (alas!) no person ought to be lavish of his promises, in matters of this fort.

One of the ladies of the company, of the preceding evening, had a fon about twenty, who for some time had been studying the law at Paris; and, for that reason, had not yet made his appear-

ance among us.

This youth happened to arrive at his mother's house, the very night that the promise in question had been made. 'Twas then vacation time, and he was come to spend it at his mother's. This lady, who had no other child, and loved her fon almost to distraction, informed him of the agreement, and that I was to make choice of the principal male-performer. The young gentleman hearing this, begged his mother to let him be a candidate. She complied at at once, and this with the greater fatisfaction, as there was not, in all this company, one that exceeded him in the nobleft qualifications, both of mind and person.

This youth, overjoyed that he should arrive at fo auspicious a juncture, went, next morning, to visit some young gentlemen in the neighbourhood; when he informed them of his intention to venture in the choice which was to be made. The other young people, (being each prejudiced in his own favour,) were no ways intimidated at this new candidate. They met, and proceeded together, to the countess's seat, with the rest of the company; who were as much delighted with the thoughts

thoughts of this fingular diversion, as the eager

young gentlemen could poffibly be.

I appeared, bursting into a laugh, as I came in, at my reflecting on their credulity. As the countels had taught me my lesson the night before. the feemed to join with the whole company, in urging me to declare, when I still refused. young gentleman, lately come from Paris, was introduced by his mother, and defired that I would permit him to be a candidate. I had taken no notice of him before; but I now felt, at feeing him, a fecret pleasure which the fight of no man had ever raised in me till then. He appeared less eager in his addresses than the rest; I even fancied I perceived, that, if he were urgent in his compliments, (as the other candidates,) this was merely for form fake; and I discovered, by the drift of his discourse, that he could have wished chance might have decided on that occasion, rather than a preference; he confidering that as a choice made by the heart, to which he imagined a new-comer could not have the least pretentions. The uneafiness he felt on this occasion pleased me, and inspired me with the like. I wish'd it were possible for him to guess, that I was more delighted with him, than with any of the rest. In order to give my young gentleman some little notion of this, I faid (looking at him with an air of good nature;) - I will not, (Sir) declare in favour of any one; and if you can be concerned at the choice I shall make; you may be affured, that you will not have the mortification to fee any person preferred to yourfelf .- Doubt not, (young lady, fays he hastily,) but that I shall be concerned: Tho' but just now arrived, I perhaps may be more strongly affected than any other man; I therefore, will urge you no farther, because I have more cause to fear than the rest of the candidates.

ı

1

.

t

0

e .

5

is

-

e

9

ts

In the mean time, the others prefifted in calling out for the choice; when one of them finding me absolutely bent not to make a declaration, defired that I would agree to an expedient which he himself had thought on this moment. --- Since you are afraid, (fays he, young lady,) of exciting jealousy; give orders that he among us, who may repeat his part soonest, shall have the honour of acting with you. This young gentleman probably flattered himself, that his great strength of memory would obtain him the prize. At this propofal, the young gentlemen suspended their intreaties for some time. I approved of the hint, and by this means got rid of importunities which now began to be troublesome. They then confulted together; and, at last, agreed unanimously, that the prize should be bestowed on him who should repeat the part in question first.

Scarce was this expedient agreed to, but the young gentleman just arrived from Paris said:

That since the preference was to be given to him, (among them) who should soonest say by heart, the part in question; there consequently would be no occasion for a second meeting, in order to declare the victor, since he could repeat the part, about which the contest arose; he having performed that part at a friend's house in Paris, where this tragedy had been acted. And therefore, that as his fellow candidates had themselves enacted the law, they could have no room to complain; whence he no ways doubted but that I would declare in his favour, as I had agreed to name that person as conqueror, who should first repeat this

part.

I will confess I was overjoyed, that the chance which had made him learn it, should tally so exactly with my inclination. I did not now wait from

from the least reply from his brother candidates; I hasting, (perhaps with an imprudent eagerness) to declare that he had won the prize; and consequent-

ly that it was him I chose.

d

t

is

e

it

His rivals, furprifed at an accident which at once crushed all their fond expectations in the birth, were struck dumb at this decision. Immediately they all beheld him with an envious eye; and were almost tempted to quarrel with the gentleman who had proposed so fatal an expedient. He himself seemed vexed to the soul. However, no one contested the choice; and he it fell upon, (whom I shall call Oriantes,) was appointed to act the part of a prince, with me, in the tragedy in question. We now gazed at each other; when I fancied I faw, in his eyes, the pleasure that this gave him; and I doubt not but that mine told him the fatisfaction which I myself felt likewise. The conversation was now carried on far less briskly than before; the other candidates being inconsolable at their baving lost, in an instant, all hopes; and their uneafiness was painted, but too visibly, in their respective countenances. ever, I did all that lay in my power, (so far as compliments and civility would go,) to footh their forrows. I observed, that no one of them had the least cause to be uneasy at this accident; and that they should not be any ways affected with a choice, which chance alone had directed. now feemed to acquiesce with my reasons. then gave out the other parts; and after having fixed upon a day for the rehearfal, the company withdrew, and I continued alone with my lady.

I did not dare, at first, to ask whether her ladyship was pleased with my conduct on this occasion.

She

She foared me this trouble; and the manner in which fhe delivered herfelf, made me conclude that the was fatisfied in general, with my whole behaviour. She objected only to one thing, and that was, that I had named Orientes too halfily. A young woman, (fays the,) cannot discover too much referve and indifference on fuch occasions. She continued to observe, that I ought to have permitted the young gentleman to pronounce, who, notwithstanding their jealoufy, would probably have acted agreeably to the dictates of juffice: and she ascribed, in a great measure, their uneasiness to the hasty manner in which I had made my declaration. However, that the herfelf was perfuaded, my impetuofity was merely the effect of carelessines; but that I must take more care for the future. I will confess, that I was surprised at her great fagacity, in taking fuch notice of my eagerness in making the declaration; and I myfelf had forgot it, fo fudden and involuntary was the impulse which had given rife to it. However, I replied, that I probably might have been too hafty on this occasion; but that it was owing wholly to my defire of putting an end to a contest, which must necessarily have happened among the young gentlemen; but that the might be affured, this was the fole reason why I had behaved in such a manner.

We then talked no more on this subject; but I could not forbear reflecting, the whole evening, on all that had past; when I perceived, very sensibly, that I took a pleasure in thinking on Orientes. I was so little acquainted with the passion of love, that I abandoned myself without the least reserve, to my first sensations. I went to bed, impatient for the return of the day, as this would

would give me the pleasure of seeing my young gentleman again; I not doubting but that he would pay me a vifit. He came accordingly on the morrow, but not till after dinner, the laws of decorum not permitting him to fee me in the morning. The countefs was then not at home; an affair relating to her estate, having oblig'd her to go three or four miles from her feat; so that Oriantes found me alone. The reception I gave him show'd, that I was highly delighted with his company; and I can affure you, that nothing I had ever met with in my life, gave me a more sensible pleasure, than that of feeing myfelf with him, without any other witnesses but ourselves. At his coming up to me, he feem'd in some consusion, which prevented his observing mine; however, we soon recover'd ourfelves. Heavens! what a conversation had we, and how greatly did it inchant us both! our eyes made, reciprocally, a thousand protestations of the most tender passion, before we dar'd to pronounce it with our lips. I will not give you the particulars of our conversation, such pleasing those only who are the actors in them. He mention'd to me the chance which had procur'd him a felicity he would have preferr'd to all fublunary ones, tho' it might have been the lot of another. The answer I made, feem'd to hint, that I only wish'd he then spoke the truth. He understood my meaning; and thank'd me for this, in words overflowing with tenderness. My heart conspir'd but too strongly, to render these testimonies he gave me of his passion perfuafive. I now imagin'd, that I ought no longer to harbour the least doubt with regard to the fincerity of his intentions; however, I made him a flight answer; but then, how eloquent were my eyes !- What shall I fay farther !- He made me an offer of his heart; he ask'd whether I wou'd accept of it; he fell at my feet. I blush'd, I trem-VOL. L bled.

bled. I now was no longer able to observe a silence, which, tho' eloquent, fav'd my modesty the trouble of making a declaration with my lips .-Rife, Oriantes (faid I;) I ought to blush with confusion. No one of your competitors, ever fince the vows they made of loving me, has hitherto had the advantage of making fo free a declaration as you have. You arrived but yesterday; and yet. you now venture to declare a passion for me. I have not bid you be filent; I listen to you; you fall down before me, and I cannot even feign anger. Save me, (Oriantes) fave me from the confusion which both your conduct and mine ought to fill me with! Why cannot I persuade you, that you should still doubt whether I really have an inclination for you! But, alas! this is no longer in my power. You perceive how dearly I love you; this conquest was too cheap, and you will too foon be habituated to the certainty of being charm'd in your favour. Take back therefore, (Oriantes) that heart, and let me be at rest. I am not my own mistress, and must shape my will after that of my mother's, Be perfuaded, however, that nothing in this world could give me fo much delight, as for her to confent to the love I have for you; but it is fit we both stop here.-'Twas now impossible for Oriantes to conceal his joy; when the greatness of his paffion inflam'd me still more.—He begg'd I would give him leave to fwear eternal conftancy. I have forgot the feveral particulars I faid to him on this occasion; however, we at last agreed to love each other, and to conceal our flame from all the world. As we had been near two hours together, I begg'd him to withdraw; I expecting the counters every moment, and he obey'd. I then went and shut myself up in my chamber, where grief, pleasure, fear, shame; in short, a thousand different passions prey'd upon me at once. But when persons are in love,

love, the reflections they make, in their own mindhave a stronger effect upon them than the presence of the object beloved. I felt within myself, that I doated on Oriantes: I knew no other pleasure than that of gazing upon him, of prefenting my heart, and of hearing him offer me his. By this time the countess was returned home, when I faid that Oriantes had been to pay her a visit. My lady seem'd to give little attention to this, it being natural that he should come and fee us. With regard to myself, I concealed, as carefully as I possibly could, all my fond impulses, and this I did very happily at first; but those impulses grew afterwards so strong, by the pleafure I found in feeing my lover perpetually, that they were foon discovered by any one, who

took the least pains to examine me.

'Twere needless to tell you the several things which past, till the time of performing the tragedy. I faw Oriantes every day, and frequently alone. And now the day of playing was fix'd. If it might not be look'd upon as vanity in me, to observe how much Oriantes and I delighted all the spectators, I wou'd affirm, that no actors ever play'd their parts with greater energy than we. But how prodigiously were those who beheld us, mistaken on this occasion! Our fondness one for the other. was suppos'd to be the effect of art only; and yet, I believe no passion was ever painted in more strong and lively colours. Both of us found fo delicate a pleasure, in vowing an eternal constancy, before those from whom, at another time, we should have concealed it with the utmost care; that I am of opinion, no two hearts ever spoke with less referve than ours; by the blisful opportunity indulg'd us, of performing those parts, as the' they had been merely fictitious.

Ga

A thou-

. A thousand compliments were afterwards paid us, for our feigning so very successfully; and so many pleafant things were then faid to us, that Oriantes and I could by this means, speak with greater familiarity, in prefence of any one, than we dar'd to do before. He styl'd me, on every occafion, his princes; whilft I always call'd him, (agreeably to the tragedy,) my lord; and this is now become so habitual to me, (continued the fair anchoret,) that I gave you the fame title, when I first addressed you; and I beg you to let me always

call you fo.

Four months more passed, without any one's perceiving the mutual passion with which we were inflam'd; but at the end of that time, Oriantes, who now had finish'd his study of the Law, grew melancholy and pensive, the characteristicks that diffinguish those who are prey'd upon by a violent paffion. And now his mother, who doated upon him, griev'd at the gloom to which he was a prey, enquired feveral times the cause of it. Oriantes made fome difficulty, at first, to gratify her kind curiofity; but at last, as she one day pressed him more earnestly than usual; this darling son, after fondly clasping his indulgent mother, confess'd that he lov'd me; and added, that it would be impossible for him ever to be happy without me.-His mother, without discovering the least surprize, only observ'd, in the softest manner, that he was as yet too young to form such an engagement; and that, supposing my mother, (the old lady,) should give her confent; he yet might, afterwards, regret in vain his loss of liberty. ——I had infinitely rather, (fays he, with the greatest warmth,) deplore my want of liberty, (if it were possible I cou'd deplore it, when given up for the fake of fo dearly beloved an object,) than languish in an expectation which I very possibly cou'd not resist. I therefore.

I reverence more than any thing in the would, to let me be happy. You know that I am well born, and heir to great riches; so that if you will but be so gracious, as to inform the mother of her whom I addore, of the mighty passion I have for her daughter, she surely will not oppose what only can make me blest. Orientes's mother thought, that it would be to no purpose for her to endeavour to divert him from his passion. She therefore promis'd to speak to the countes about it that very day, and was as good as her word. I was taking the air upon the terrass when she return'd home; which gave the lady in question, all the time requisite for proposing our marriage to my imagin'd mother.

The countess was surprized and consounded at this compliment. The match would, indeed, have been quite suitable, had I been her daughter; but, spite of the affection she had for me, 'twas no easy matter for a person, on this occasion, to go such lengths, as to deprive heirs of an inheritance which was their natural right; merely for the sake of one no ways related to her, and to whom she was bound by no other tye than that of a generous compassion. Accordingly justice would not permit her to hesitate a moment on this occasion; but as she had a real love for me, and was unwilling to divulge my obscure birth, she form'd a resolution, which without subjecting her to any engagement, satisfied this good lady in some measure.

The countess therefore, after returning the kindest reply to this proposal, added, that before she wou'd give a positive answer, she must first sound my inclination in private; and that, shou'd she find me dispos'd like her son, she then would certainly consent, with joy, to our nuptials.

Oriantes's mother, after this affurance had been given her, withdrew; and flew to her ion, whom

the inform'd of the auspicious news. My young lover did not doubt of success, as the decision of

this affair depended on me.

But now the countefs, who had postpon'd it for no other reason, than to inform me that I was not her daughter; and to engage me, by the discovery, to declare that I wou'd not marry, for fome time, came to me in my chamber, whither I was The uneafiness which appear'd in her countenance, and her precaution in shutting the door after her, (looking first to see if no one could overhear us,) all this feemed to forebode evil; and made me conclude, that the was going to acquaint me with some very disagreeable particulars. I even ask'd her, with an air of confusion, what she was going to do; when her ladyship, coming up, drew a chair close to mine, and seated herself. I gaz'd at her in great perplexity, when she at last broke her filence, and spoke thus.

I have fome strange matters to tell you, (my dear girl,) which you would never have been let into, had you liv'd a thousand years, but for an accident that happen'd just now. Know that I fympathize beforehand with you, in the grief with which you must necessarily be seiz'd, but can conceal nothing from you. Orientes is fallen in love with you; and I am ignorant whether or no your affection be reciprocal. I confequently cannot fay, whether you have given him any hopes. However, you might have done this without incurring the least guilt; and I doubt not but that all the impulses of your heart, were directed by wisdom. You naturally imagin'd that your birth and fortune were upon a foot with his; but it is high time I undeceive you concerning this suppos'd equality, which, very propably, may have misled you .-Know that you are not my daughter, nor can I tell you who you are. Heavens!

ward,

Heavens! (cried I, pale and in the deepest confusion;) O my good lady! I imagin'd you to be my mother, and you, (alas,) are no ways related to me! --- My fighs and tears prevented my faving a word more. I then fell back in my chair, without showing scarce the least signs of life. - I am greatly afflicted, (fays she, taking me in her arms,) to fee you in this deplorable condition; but be comforted, my dear child. If you are defirous of being still called my daughter, and of always styling me your mother, you may do this as long as you live. - Can you be fo cruel, (my lady, fays I) as to inform me of these dreadful particulars, without telling me whose child I am ?---Pray who are my parents? (good my lady;)-To whom do I owe my birth? She then related, how she had found me, and likewise what she had been told by the farmer, who had brought me up till three years old; after which the continued her discourse as follows.

Oriantes is then in love with you: for this I was told by his mother, who went out just now, and defired my confent for you to marry him. I deferr'd giving a positive answer, upon pretence that I wou'd first advise with you about it. Methinks you cannot expect that my affection, for you, should be carried so far, as that, (forgetting those who are united to me by the ties of blood) I shou'd bequeath to you, an estate devolv'd to me from my ancestors, and which consequently ought to descend to my family. However I promife, to have no less regard for you, so long as I live, than if you were my own child; and you may expect great things in time to come, both from the natural generofity of my temper, and from the strong love I have for you. The only return I ask, is, that you would take advantage of, and comply with the advice I have to give you. Be, therefore, hencefor-G 4

ward, more on the referve with respect to Oriantes; behave to him with that cold civility, which rids us of those whom we are desirous to shake off. In a few days I'll send you five or six miles from hence, where you shall stay some time, in order that absence may compleat the cure which your coldness shall have begun: and as I am to give his mother an answer to morrow, I'll tell her that, aster informing you of the desire Oriantes had to make his addresses, you conjur'd me to let you enjoy your liberty; whence, (I shall add,) I con-

cluded that you had an aversion to marriage. All the time that the counters was talking in this strain, the tears ran down my cheeks; but, particularly, when I was told the reply she design'd to make, on the morrow, to Oriantes's mother; 'twas then, (great gods!) that my reason fled me in an inftant, and was fucceeded by black despair. --- What's the meaning of all this? (cried she;) are you griev'd, (my dear girl,) at the answer I am to make? Is it possible that you can be struck with fo violent a passion for Oriantes? Tis but too true, (my good lady, replied I, squeezing her hand in mine;) Yes, yes, I do love him, (mother,) for this name is fo dear to me, that I shall never cease calling you by it. An equal sympathy has united both our hearts; and it was in pursuance of my advice, that his mother open'd herself to you. I do not defire you to leave me your estate; the education which you have bestowed on me, and the pity you indulg'd me at the time when my condition was deplorable, are possessions so valuable in themselves, that I cannot desire any thing greater; but be fo good, (dear, dear parent,) as to compleat your kindness to me. Know that I am distractedly fond of Oriantes, and that he burns with no less violent a flame for me. Alas! he wou'd die, should he think I had refus'd to marry him.

him. Ah no! I cannot prevail with myself to put my lover to so severe a trial; I am perfectly well acquainted with the extreme tenderness of his foul. for which reason he deserves a quite different recompence. I have only one favour to beg, which is, that when Oriantes's mother shall come to morrow, to know your reply; be pleas'd to fay, that you spoke to me, but that I had not yet taken my resolution; and that I desir'd to answer her son myself. Heaven will be so gracious, between this and next morning, as to inspire me with such a reply as it may be proper for me to make. countess listen'd to me with the greatest attention, and feem'd to pity me from her heart. - My dear girl, (fays she,) as you are exceedingly pressing, I'll do what you desire, but I'll now leave you. Reflect at leisure on all I have said. Be only sure of this, (and don't forget it,) that I'll love you for ever; and now make one noble effort to merit the very high regard I have for you: farewel. Saying these words she left me, when poor I staid: alone in my chamber, a fad prey to the most killing anguish. 'Twould only tire, should I tell you: the various reflections I made on this occasion. At last I went to bed, but could not shut my eyes all night. I water'd my bed with my tears; and regretted my want of an estate, and the uncertainty of my birth, no farther than as they influenc'd my paffion; and I compar'd the person whom Oriantes, in bestowing his affection on me, had thought he lov'd, with her who would appear before him the next day. --- How gloomy will be his thoughts, (said I to myself,) when, instead of a young gentlewoman, of a good family, and a confiderable fortune, he will find, (in me,) an unhappy creature, who owes, entirely, all that she seems to be, to the compassion which a good lady had for her; and who, but for this compassion, wou'd perhapa G 5

perhaps have been now reduced to the extremes of poverty! A young woman quite nameless, without one relation, and with not a shilling in the world. Resect, (my good lord,) how horrid an idea I

must then have entertain'd of my situation.

By this time 'twas day light, when Oriantes's mother came, as she promis'd, to enquire my anfwer. I know not, (faid the counters) what may be her design, I not having been able to draw any thing out of her, by which I cou'd guess her thoughts; the only defiring leave to speak to your fon. - Very well, (fays Oriantes's mother;) I'll bid him go this afternoon and pay her a visit; whereby we possibly shall know, to morrow, what is to be done; and provided (Madam,) you do but approve of the match fo well as I do, and things are found fuitable, I hope my fon will be entirely pleas'd.—You may be perfwaded, (replied the countess) that I shall be perfectly well satisfied with all you do, in case the sentiments of my daughter, happen to correspond with mine.

The lady, after pronouncing these words, went away, and the countefs came to me in my chamber. I was then in a most deplorable frame of mind, upon which her ladyship did all she cou'd to console me; and, for this purpose, employ'd the fondest caresses, and the most tender expressions; but, alas! 'twas not possible for her to soften the rigour of my woe. In a word, my dispondency was fo great, that I had not power to speak a word, and answer'd no otherwise than by sighs. Dinner was now ferv'd up in my chamber, when my lady fent away all the fervants; she being unwilling that they should see me on this occasion. Dinner being ended, word was brought, that Oriantes was come to visit me; upon which, the countess order'd him to be introduc'd into my chamber, and immediately left us together. My lover, who had been told

told my reply, by his mother, was tortur'd with the deepest anguish. He could not conceive the reason why I shou'd desire to speak with him; as all that now remained, for our concluding the nuptials, was my faying yes, which he imagin'd it would be impossible for me to refuse doing. On this account he trembled all over at his coming in. The instant he cast his eyes on me: --- Heavens! (cries he,) what do I behold! What is it can have diminish'd the lustre of those soul-delighting eyes? Why has this paleness over-spread your cheeks? ah! why fo much forrow on this countenance? how deadly are these omens? (loveliest of the creation!) what am I to think of all this? O free me from the dire pangs I feel! Can I believe what I fee? - Oriantes, Oriantes, (faid I to him,) the fad state in which you now behold me, is the effect of the most just grief. Alas! my woe is past all description; and never wretch was so unfortunate as I.—Gods! (cried he,) what expreffions are these! tell me, (thou dearest creature,) what is it that can thus pierce your foul with anguish? pour out your whole heart before me. Pray fit down, (fays I,) and interrupt me not .-I then spake to him as follows.

You have lov'd me, (Oriantes,) and you still love me with a passion which was one day to form my sole felicity, but, alas! 'tis all at an end. That passion which inspir'd me with the strongest, the most sincere affection for you; that passion, continued with so many vows and protestations, must be no more.

No more! (cried he, in the deepest agonies;) tear, O tear then, from my breast, the heart which it ingrosses entirely, since I cannot live a moment longer than I am permitted to love!——My good Oriantes, (said I,) I besought you not to interrupt me. Perhaps your pangs may be soften'd, if you will but have the patience to listen to me. 'Twas

'Twas not without reason I observ'd to you, that you ought to love me no longer: know that your honour is concern'd, as well as that of the lady who gave you birth, and even the fate of her on whom you design to bestow your affection; all, all, cry aloud for you to love me no longer, and prove the absolute necessity for this. Be so indulgent therefore only as to hear me. You fondly imagin'd me to be the countes's daughter; but, (woe is me!) fo far from my being fuch, even I myself am ignorant who it is that gave me birth. A farmer, who likewife was a stranger to this particular, and to whom some money had been given to bring me up, gave me to the countess at her request. This good lady has brought me up hitherto, as her daughter; and I never knew but that I was fuch, till your addresses to me, caus'd her to disclose the whole secret. I have said enough to you. Farewel, (Oriantes,) alas! farewel, for ever! I am no longer worthy of your regard; the only thing I can claim is your pity, and this I must beg you to indulge me. 'Twould be impossible for words to describe how justly I may claim it; how dreadful my fate is, and how dearly I love you (at this inftant,) spite of the eternal obstacle to our paffion, which I have now told you. Once again, farewel. Alas! the more I behold you, the more I must adore you. Fly me, sly an unfortunate wretch, whom you cannot love with honour.

Whilst I was thus a prey to the most bitter affliction, Oriantes had seiz'd one of my hands, which I endeavour'd to draw back, but in vain; he having got sast hold of it, and seeming quite out of his fenses. When I had done speaking, his head sell on that hand, when bedewing it with his tears, and sighing as though his heart would break;—Inchanting creature! (says he, softly, and in a tone of despair,) death shall only separate, shall tear me from you.—He repeated these words a multitude of times. Gods! what tongue could describe the impulses of our souls on this occasion! at last Orientes recovering his senses, seem'd to have taken some mighty resolution.—Hear me, (says he,) either for the last time. or else to determine you to see me for ever.

I know not, (continues he) charming angel! who you are, nor do I desire to be satisfied in this particular. As I love you from my foul, merely on account of your numberless charms, I prefer you to any of your fex, how conspicuous soever for family or fortune. Farther, the obscurity of your birth, fo far from leffening you in my esteem, only endears you the more. Yes, (peerless maid!) I love you a thousand times dearer for that very 'Twere impossible this should be otherreason. wife, as you have inspir'd me with the strongest passion, which increases every time I view that generous countenance; as well as when I reflect on your most engaging carriage, which you doubtless must owe to the parents you sprung from, and not to education. In a word, (sweetest creature!) I fwear to love you, so long as heaven shall permit me to draw this vital air. Talk not to me of the farmer who first took pity on you; of the countes's charitable favour, nor of the ignominy which you imagine this will bring upon me; diminutive objects all! trifling confiderations! which cannot make the least impression on a heart you have once touch'd. From this moment I give up all claim to my patrimony and to my family. I will preferve nothing but you, and you shall be all things to me. If therefore I am dear to you, fly me not; or be affured, that you'll have cause to reproach yourself with being the occasion of my death, should you take the least step to break off from me. 'Tis you are to bid me either live or die. Now

Now confider whether you ought to put a period to my life, rather than prolong it, when it will be

devoted to you only.

I will confess, that I was quite charm'd, with the warmth and generofity of Oriantes's passion. I wept, but my tears did not proceed fo much from grief, as from joy to find him so inexpressibly kind. During some moments I felt, (so mighty is love,) a fecret passion in the strange adventure. which inform'd me that I was a poor foundling; as this circumstance gave Oriantes an opportunity

of proving how dear I was to him.

Is it possible, (faid I,) that all I have faid, should only increase your fondness for me! Heavens! is it just that a heart so generous, so constant as your's, should be won by an ill fated wretch, who knows not her birth?—You are then so indulgent, (dear Oriantes, fays I,) as to put your life in my hands, so that it is in my power either to prolong or end Now can you once imagine, after all I have heard, that I can balance a fingle moment to preferve it; a life the fole support of mine, and without which the greatest blessings would become insupportable to me. O! yes, I will preserve that precious life; and be affur'd that you commit it to the care of one, to whom it is dearer than even to her from whom you fprung. You must, you shall live, fince your days are in my disposal; but then you are dependent on a mother, who will be inform'd how mean the creature is, whom you condescend to love; for the countess, who (as I obferv'd,) is not my parent, has in some measure forbad me ever to see you more; she even declaring, that I must go several miles from hence, to break off all correspondence with you. My refusal to obey her command (never to fee you again,) will exasperate her against me. She then will divulge the whole secret of my birth, when your mother

will immediately enjoyn you to shun me. Your refusal to comply, will inflame her vengeance, the dire effects of which will fall on my head. Immediately the counters and the, will unite in perfecuting me. However, imagine not that fear will ever be capable of leffening the fondness I have for you. But I conjure you (adoreable Oriantes!) before I run the hazard of all the dangers, which I both foresee and defy, to reslect on the peril to which you yourself will thereby be expos'd; consider, (confider, I fay,) that you depend wholly on your mother; that your disobedience will show too evidently, your difregard for her; and that the only fad fruit of your disobedience to her will, will be the loss of her affection, and that of the esteem of every one.—I should have proceeded farther in my remonstrances, had Oriantes permitted me to do it, but as they were altogether displeasing to him, he wou'd not let me fay a word more, but interrupting me, spoke as follows: Be affured that I intend not to disobey my mother in any respect, I being perfectly fensible of the reverence due to her; befides, those only offend, who disobey when it is in their power to do otherwise; but you know very well, (dear creature!) that I am no longer my own mafter; and confequently, that whatever my actions may be, they will claim pity more than an-After all, my entreaties and my tears may perhaps make a stronger impression on my mother, than we dare yet hope for. However, let the worst go to the worst; and though she should continue inflexible, I again declare, that my passion can never be extinguish'd but with life.

Oriantes said a thousand things more; and surely no lover ever discover'd more fondness, or greater regard, than he indulg'd me; whilst I, in return, promis'd to comply with all his desires. Alas! I imagin'd that he, who gave me his heart without

without the least referve, had a just title to mine. We then consulted together for expedients, in order to prevent this incident from being made publick; vainly flattering ourselves, that something might possibly intervene, which wou'd favour our passion; and after a thousand mutual vows and protestations, Oriantes lest me.

The end of the third P A R.T.

nad all library (s. m.

PHARSAMOND.

PART IV.

THE moment after Oriantes was withdrawn, the countefs came into my chamber, to hear the things I had faid to him. What strange effects are wrought, by love, upon hearts! The moment fhe came in, I consider'd her as an enemy with whom I must diffemble; and all I had promis'd, all I ow'd her, was inftantly eraz'd from my memory. Well, (my dear girl, fays she, as she came up to me,) what have you refolv'd upon? - Alas! madam, (replied I,) I made a full declaration to Oriantes; and tho' he protested, that the change in my circumstances cou'd not any ways lessen the love he bears me; I yet am persuaded, from the coldness and indifference with which he made this protestation, that his passion will not long be able to withstand the reasons that so justly called upon him, to banish me for ever from his memory. Indeed, I myself, (the better to impose on her ladyship,) was determin'd to pay an implicit obedience to all her instructions; I being firmly persuaded, that they would be dictated wholy by affection and good nature.

During this interval, Oriantes being returned home, his mother concluded, by the melancholy which appeared in his countenance, that I had not given a favourable answer to his addresses. This had her with indignation, for the contempt, (as she imagin'd) in which we held her son.——She took notice of it with great warmth, some days after to the countess; who supposing that, instead of the considence

confidence which I had declared I had made to my lover, I, on the contrary, had accus'd him of being the fole obstacle to our marriage; let the mother of Oriantes into the whole fecret, and frankly told the manner in which the first found me. The lady upon hearing my flory, was all aftonishment. She own'd, that she had been greatly offended, at the cold reception she suppos'd that her son had met with, in his courtship; and took her leave, with affuring, that she wou'd command him, to never see me more; adding, that the best way to prevent our ever meeting again would be, for her ladyship to fend me at a distance from her fight, for some time; and the countess promis'd to comply with her defires. Her ladyship kept her word, the declared to me, this very day, that I should be instantly remov'd from her house. Hearing these words, I shudder'd; my tears, (spite of myendeavours to restrain them) show'd but too visibly how griev'd I was, at the fad thoughts of banishment to which I was condemn'd; but the countels expressed herself with so much severity, that I did not doubt but she would put her menaces in execution. I then went and thut myfelf up in my bed-chamber, to confider what course it would be proper for me to take; but my spirits were in too great a flutter, for me to fix upon any thing, my foul being wholly engroffed by my forrows.

In the mean time, the moment Oriantes's mother was got home, the inform'd her fon of every particular the knew concerning me, imagining that he was quite in the dark as to this affair; and that when he should be told who I was, this would put an end to his passion at once. But Oriantes, on the contrary, had inform'd her of every thing; adding, that the obscurity of my birth, was no reason why I should appear less amiable in his eyes. He then expatiated on a thousand good qualities, (doubt-

(doubtless not possess'd by me) which love had painted in his imagination. His mother, amaz'd to find that my flory had no effect upon him; asham'd that her son should be so great a slave to a paffion, which she thought reflected eternal difhonour on him; after declaring, that he must not expect the least favour from her, in case he contimued to visit me; and that tho' she had the greatest affection for him, it was not fo violent, as to make her confent to a marriage which must bring eternal infamy on their family; added a numberless multitude of reflections more, intimating that my birth might possibly be attended with the most contemptible, as well as most odious circumstances; and concluded her discourse, by commanding him, not only to lay afide all farther thoughts of fo difgraceful a match; but likewise to never see me more, upon pain of feeling the most bitter effects of her refentment. Oriantes rifing up at thefe words: - I will not, (fays he, honour'd madam,) exasperate you farther, by telling you how dearly I love Clorinna; I hope that time will mollify you, and make you compassionate the fondness with which I burn for her. Let it suffice that I solemnly declare, I bear all possible reverence to you, (my indulgent parent!) but in regard to your conjuring me to forget for ever Clorinna; I shall only follow, in disobeying you, impulses that are wholly involuntary, and which drag me a long, spite of myfelf. Proper care, (faid his mother,) shall be taken, to prevent the shocking effects of your weakness. Iphila (for that was the countes's name.) has promis'd me to fend her from her house. Absence may, very probably, lessen the violence of your love; and, at last, make you forget her. -Heavens! (cried Oriantes in the strongest agony,) is Clorinna to be fent away from the countes's! and cou'd you yourself desire, nay strongly urge her removal? Alas! this will be deftroying the life you gave me. But I will return it to you; for know, that death will be an inestimable bleffing to me, compar'd to the anguish of living without Clorinna. But I will fly, and prevent her being carried off. Adieu, Madam. Gods! re-

Hore to me my dear, dear Clorinna!

Oriantes, having pronounc'd these words, arriv'd at Iphila's in the utmost rage; when spying me, at a diffance, feated in the middle of the garden, on a turf which I water'd with my tears;-How! (inchanting creature, fays he advancing forward) is it you I fee? and have I the exquisite pleasure of beholding you once again? I was told that you were dragging from this house; upon which I flew hither, firmly refolv'd to carry you off, or lose my life. - What dreadful resolution is this? (faid I;) For Heaven's fake, (much lov'd Oriantes,) calm your transports; what would you have me do, after the folemn promise I made to see you whenever it should be in my power? Ah me! I did not think our enemies wou'd have proceeded to fuch violent lengths. What can I do? -Alas nothing. I poor wretch, whose only defence is fighs and tears. Just as he had utter'd these words, we perceiv'd Iphila hasting towards us, and enflam'd with anger .- Ungrateful creature! (fays she,) I find that you are not afraid of disobeying my commands; tho' you are bound to me by fuch obligations as you can never repay. Pennylefs and an outcast as you are, what can you expect from the young gentleman whole passion you inflame? have you the least claim to any fortune? But, for my pity, what would have become of you now, and what would you have been had I not given you shelter? Should Labandon you, this wou'd be taking but half my revenge for your black ingratitude to me. Know, that

that the education I bestow'd on you, (merely out of charity,) gives me a power over you, and this power I will exert; and after you shall have felt the most dire effects of my just resentment, I'll then complete my vengance, by returning you back, to all the meanness; all the ignominy of the

condition out of which I took you.

I have infinite obligations to your ladyship (fays I in a tone mix'd with pride and respect). You indeed have brought me up hitherto; and you threaten me with the feverest punishment for my ingratitude. Your ladyship is to act as you please on this occasion. Hitherto, indeed, I could have recourse to no one but you, madam. I myself don't know who were my parents. Perhaps too, the education you thought fit to bestow upon me, may be far above my birth; nevertheless, what expressions foever you use, to convince me of the vileness of my extraction, I yet may perhaps be nobly born. The words which you employ, in order to fill me with confusion, have a quite contrary effect from what you intended; they inspiring me with a certain pride, which proves the greatness of my de-Now this pride fills me with all imaginable gratitude for you; and if I cherish this gratitude, after the many bitter things you have here faid to me, you can expect nothing more. This is the only answer I have to make; and you now may exercise, as you shall think proper, all the power which you pretend to have over me.

Dearest Clorinna, (said Oriantes with transport) this power shall never be employ'd against you, so long as life shall be indulg'd me.—Pray, Sir, remember, (said Iphila to him,) that as you are in my house, it does not become you to talk in this strain.—As to you, (Clorinna,) sollow me this moment, or I shall use force.—Iphila saying these words, seiz'd me by the arm, and pushing me, oblig'd

TA2 PHARSAMOND.

me to walk before her. Oriantes was going to oppose this violent treatment, when anger bereaving him of his strength, we saw him fall in a swoon. As the countes had the highest regard for my dear Oriantes's mother, she called out for some of her servants to take care of him; and then forc'd me up into her chamber where she shut me in.

She judg'd that, as foon as my lover should be come to himself, 'twould be difficult for her to remove me from the house, without some fatal accident; for which reason she resolv'd to send me away with all possible speed. Coming about an hour after into the room where I was confin'd ;- Follow me, (fays she,) in a severe tone. - I went after her without making the least refistance, or so much as uttering a fingle word. I then was thrust into a chaife, unaccompanied by any person, when immediately we drove from the house. And now, the reflection, that I possibly might never see Oriantes again, check'd all my pride in an instant. His anguish, and the condition in which I had left him, griev'd me as much as the fad loss I should sustain, by never feeing him more. I now fill'd the folitudes through which I pass'd with my moan. What shall I say farther? After riding four hours, we came into a wood, which we pass'd through. At the end of this wood, I spied an old mansion, and there the chaife stopped. Immediately the two men on horseback alighted; I then was taken out of the chaife, and forc'd into the house; when the housekeeper opening a dark room that was well enough furnish'd, he put me into it. I imagin'd, observing the faces of those that accompanied me, that my youth and my tears had excited their pity. I was going to speak to them, without knowing what I had to fay, when these men, (afraid, perhaps of the compassion for me, which was stealing upon them,) left me a moment after I had retir'd to the chamber.

chamber. Thus I found myself in an instant, quite alone; without assistance, without a companion, and (the most direful of all reslections,) without hopes of ever beholding my Oriantes, whose dear remembrance alone kept me alive, and without

which I should have died with anguish.

Sustenance was brought me regularly twice a day, and I was as well fed here as I had been at the countess's. I spent about three months, alone, in this room, which plung'd me into so deep a melancholy, that I sound my strength and health decay perpetually. Life was now become odious to me. I would often call upon my dear, dear Oriantes, and still sound a pleasure in the name; which indeed, was

the only one I enjoy'd in this place.

e

-

1-

at

ve

11

be

en

he

e-

gh

v-

nat

1

hat

of

pon

the ber.

You'll eafily figure to yourfelf (good my lord,) the despair with which my lover was seiz'd, the moment he found I was gone. He had been a long time in a fwoon, during which Iphila had given orders for his being convey'd to his mother's, whom she inform'd, (by letter,) of all she had said to me, and the reason of her son's fainting away. As soon as Oriantes was recovered, the first words he spake, were, to ask where I was. As his mother stood near him, he, at first, turned away his eyes, that he might not behold her. But the addressed him in fuch melting language, that Oriantes in spite of the violence of his refentment, express'd it only by his fighs. His mother then shew'd him Iphila's letter, which struck him dumb, and his cheeks were instantly overspread with a deadly paleness.—— I very possibly (fays he,) shall never see her again. You now will be fatisfied.—— He did not fay a word more; however, his air feemed to flow, that his grief was not so deep but that time might dispel it. Alas! his filence proceeded from the extremes of despair; he forming a resolution within himself, to leave his mother, and fearch every where till he

0 1 8 1

had found me. Accordingly he fet out next day, upon pretence of a hunting match. I shall not tire you with the particulars of his mother's dreadful uneasiness, the moment she heard of his being gone away; all I will inform you of is, that chance, long after his departure directed him to the old mansion in which I was immur'd. He arriv'd there in the night; and it being the only house in that neighbourhood, Oriantes befought the housekeeper to let him stay there till next morning. This favour was not refus'd him; and he was permitted to lie in the very next room to mine. The wall which separated us, was not to thick as to prevent those (in one of the two rooms,) who rais'd their voices a little, from being pretty distinctly heard in the other. You will naturally suppose that the housekeeper, when he conducted Oriantes into this Chamber, did not know who he was. I had got to bed before he came into this apartment, and heard him walk. And now, a certain curiofity, (for which I cou'd not account) dispelled, at this juncture, the deep melancholy which till then had oppressed me. I liftened to the found of the feet, which I heard in this room; and from time to time, heard fighs which excited my attention to fuch a degree, that at last my heart felt the strongest emotions. A moment after, I heard words utter'd by a voice which made me start. I found myself change colour on a fudden; when the confusion into which the voice I overheard, threw me, forc'd from me likewise a deep figh. I now thought, that that person I overheard stood still, and listen'd also—Heavens! (faid I to myself,) what can this mean?) - I imagin'd that this person immediately after drew still nearer to me, Gods! (cried he, in the utmost transports, drawing nearer to the wall) can't be the? This must be her voice.

At the time that this person spoke, methough the voice I heard, did not differ from that of my Oriantes; a circumstance which made me grieve still more for the absence of that much lov'd man-And now, abandoning myself to all the anguish of my reflexions, I only vented a few fad, involuntary fighs, and liften'd no more. On the other hand, Oriantes finding me cease to speak, went to bed; resolving to enquire, next day, who was the perfon, in the adjoining room, whose moan he had overheard. He even waited impatiently for day-light; and, the inftant it appear'd, he huddled on his clothes, and came down stairs. And now, without showing the least curiosity or concern, he defired the housekeeper to inform him, about the unfortunate woman that lay in the next room. - She is a young gentlewoman, (fays he,) who has been here these three months. She never stirs out, but abandons herfelf wholly to her forrows. - Can you tell me her name? (faid Oriantes.) - No, (replied the housekeeper, with an air which seem'd to show that he did not speak truth;) but she is a most lovely creature, and was fent hither by the lady to whom this manfion belongs. ——— As the is handfome. (replied Oriantes,) I should be glad to get a glimpse of her, and I myfelf be unfeen. Sir, (fays the housekeeper,) I cannot permit you to go into her chamber; but this I'll tell you, that she sometimes puts her head out of a window which looks into you garden. Now all that you can do, in order to fatisfy your curiofity, will be, to flay an hour or two; and to take some turns in the garden. where you will fee her, in case she should come to the window. — I can stay, (faid Oriantes,) that time; and, if you'll give me leave, I'll take a breakfast with you.

Oriantes staid so long in the house, and then went into the garden; a little after which, I open'd my Vor. I. Window.

window. My lover had hid himself in a tufted arbour, whence he could eafily fee me, without being himself perceiv'd. I now appeared, when he knew me instantly. So great were the transports of his joy, that he had like to have betray'd himfelf: he, at first being strongly tempted to come out from the arbour, and stand under my window. However, a reflexion or two check'd his ardour; he confidering, that he would lofe me a fecond time. should he discover that he was acquainted with me. He therefore put a restraint upon himself; and as he intended to get me away from this place, it was neceffary I should know of his being there, and that he had found me. To lessen the surprize I shou'd be in, at feeing him again, he humm'd over a fong, which we had often fung together. I first listen'd very attentively, being now in doubt whether the whole was not a dream. Ah no! (fays I;) 'tis he! 'tis his voice! he sees me, tho' he himself be hid! - Scarce had I utter'd these words, when he came from under the arbour; not perceiving the amazement with which I had been feiz'd, at my knowing him.— Heavens! (cried I, the moment he came forth, but not loud enough to be heard.) - Oriantes then made a fign to me, with his hand, to be filent; when advancing nearer to my window; - My angel! (fays he) don't take the least notice as though you knew me; and leave to me the care of getting you out of this house. He repeated this two or three times; but spoke so very foftly, that I could scarce understand him .-He now drew out his pocket book, and wrote some minutes. He then made figns, a fecond time, for me to open all my windows; which being done, he threw a letter into my chamber. I perus'd the dear paper, the contents whereof were thefe,

VOU fill'd me with inexpressible anxiety last I night. I imagin'd that I overheard you, and was not mistaken. Being firmly persuaded that it could be no one but yourfelf, I reflected how to procure an opportunity of seeing you, as though it had been merely out of curiofity. No one, in this house thinks that I am acquainted with you, and I myself am not known here. Feign as though you had not feen me. I, on the other hand, will pretend to fet out; but shall find means to return, at twelve to night, into this garden. Chuse now, (thou idol of my foul!) either to trust yourself to a man who adores you; or else to behold him lying breathless, and pierc'd with numberless wounds, should you refuse to follow bim. Be assur'd that I'll all with the utmost caution, and lodge you in a place of fafety. A friend's house, in this neighbourhood, will be your affylum. Confult your beart.

Consult my heart! Heavens! (says I to myself,) a heart that lives for him only. Yes, I'll follow my adoreable Oriantes. Who shall withold me? Alas! a hapless wretch, oppress'd with evils as I am, may justly endeavour to free herself from them the first opportunity. After making this short reflection, I wrote the following answer.

I Have consulted my heart, (dearest Orientes,) I know you; I love you; and am certain that your passion is reciprocal. I shall be ready to follow you at midnight.

The instant I had writ, I threw him my letter, which he perused with the utmost eagerness; when I cou'd perceive joy sparkling in his eyes. He then smiling, saluted me with an air of rapture; and made signs to me that he wou'd retire, for fear of H 2

raising a suspicion in the housekeeper. He went away that moment, to his friend, to give him notice of his design; being resolv'd to return under my window at the hour appointed. Orientes had before taken care to survey the garden, which was fenc'd in only with a hedge. My window, was indeed, a great height from the ground; but the sequel will show, that he found a remedy to this, and

every other difficulty.

During this interval, Iphila's intention, in confining me in this mansion, was only that I might thereby be forc'd to lay afide all thoughts of Oriantes. There us'd to come very frequently, to this place, a man, who always enquir'd (in her name,) what I faid, and how I behav'd. On this occasion, so melancholy an account was given her of my condition, that the was greatly mov'd; upon which the refolv'd to free me from my confinement; and endeavour, by gentle methods, to make me think no more of Oriantes. The very day that this dear man had discover'd me, the housekeeper receiv'd a letter from Iphila, declaring that she should come that very night to this mansion, in order to fpend fome days there. The housekeeper did not Inform me of it, till Oriantes was gone away. Alas! this circumstance, which I could not posfibly foresee, is the sad cause of all my misfortunes! This account which I receiv'd from the housekeeper, griev'd me exceedingly; I being afraid that the arrival of Iphila, would break all the meafures taken by Oriantes. I now trembled for the idol of my affections; my heart having always forewarn'd me of every impending evil.

I pass'd the day in great anxiety. Iphila arriv'd in the evening, and came immediately into my chamber. The moment her ladyship beheld me, the burst into tears, seeing the paleness of my face, and my dejected air. She then setch'd a deep sigh, which

which show'd that her heart was really mov'd to compassion.— Ah! my lady, (fays I after a cold falute,) is it possible you can betray so much weakness, as to pity me, after having plung'd me into so many evils.—She answered me no otherwise than by embracing me, and holding me a long time clasp'd

in her arms.

I will confess that, spite of her tyrannical treatment, yet the habit of giving credit to all she faid, and my having always call'd her by the dear name of mother, wak'd in an instant all my fondness for I now embrac'd her likewise, and mix'd my tears with her's .--- I have persecuted you grievously, (faid she;) but heaven will bear me witness, (dearest daughter!) that my fole view in this, was, to prevent my being forc'd, fpite of myself, to withdraw my affection from you. I imagin'd, as I had brought you up from your infancy, that this gave me some right over you; but be persuaded that all I did was for your good. And now affure yourfelf, (my dearest girl,) that I restore you all my fondness, all my heart; whence I hope that you, in return, would facrifice a passion which it would be impossible for you ever to gratify. After faying these words, she inform'd me of all I have told you, concerning Oriantes's departure; adding, that no one could tell what was become of him.

I made no other answer to what she urg'd; as well as to all which she hop'd for from me, than by venting many deep sighs. But now, methought her ladyship discover'd so great a tenderness for me, in her behaviour; and express'd such prodigious uneasiness, on account of her ill usage of me, that I was almost forry that I had consented to Oriantes's proposal; especially as I concluded, that his attempt would be of no service to me. However, I could not forbear wishing, presently after, that his design H 2

might fucceed; as I found it would be impossible for me ever to make that facrifice, for which Iphila contended fo strenuously. Supper was brought into my chamber; and it being very late when Iphila arriv'd, 'twas almost midnight before the cloth was taken away. I pretended to be vastly sleepy, in hopes that this would make the countess withdraw to her chamber; upon which she wish'd me good night.

As foon as she was gone, I open'd my window; and was some time in doubt whether I should follow Oriantes. From my window I could see the stables, which form'd part of one of the wings of the house, when I found that all the grooms were up. This was a very unlucky circumstance for me; to which I must add that the moon shone so very bright, that I could perceive objects at a very considerable distance.

In the midst of these reslexions, I heard a ladder gently approaching my window. Orientes had got this ladder brought from his friend's house, by two men, who were with him in the garden. But, alas! an accident follow'd, which was a thousand times more grievous to me than my own death. This ladder, which Oriantes and the two men were fixing against the wall, was spy'd, in the moon-shine, by one of the servants belonging to the stable; who immediately pointed it out to some of the grooms, when they ran and took up guns; after which they stole softly forward, in order to discover what my lover was about. And now Orientes, my dear illfated Oriantes had got balf way up the ladder; I had even fpoke to him, and conjur'd him to go back; when one of the abovemention'd fellows perceiving him, fir'd his piece and shot him dead. The two men who had attended upon him, terrified at this fad accident, fled away with all imaginable speed. The servants now brought a candle, to see who it was that had fallen from the ladder. One

ble

ila

to

r-

35

in

W

d

of them had often seen my dear, dear lover, at the time when he us'd to come to Iphila's; and his dress show'd that he was not a person who intended to rob the house.

By this time the report of the musket had alarm'd the whole family. With regard to myfelf, the moment I saw Oriantes fall, I fainted away, and funk into an eafy chair that stood by me. I know not what happen'd during my fwoon, which continued near an hour; but when I reviv'd, I found myfelf in the arms of Iphila, who did all that lay in her power to comfort me. I open'd my eyes, but closed them immediately. Not long after, deep groans burft from me, and show'd but too evidently the misery of my condition. Iphila ask'd me, why Oriantes had come there with a ladder. - Leave me. leave me, (cruel woman! fays I;) 'tis his dire misfortune, as well as mine, that providence gave birth to you. These were the only words she could draw from me; upon which she ordered me to be put to bed, and I then let the maids undress me. Grief had quite spent me, and deprived me of all motion. For feveral hours I was distracted. However, I at last recovered my fenses, but this ferv'd only to plunge me into still greater her-I now look'd upon all those who were endeavouring to fuccour me, as fo many executioners; and thought they prolong'd my life, only to lengthen my anguish. I now cou'd think of nothing but death. This form'd all my hopes, and I consider'd it as a bleffing.

But now admire, (good my lord,) the surprizing effects of chance! at the very time that I was in so dreadful a state, as made every one despair of my life; Tarmino, the husband of Persiana, (I mean my father) arrived at Iphila's on a sull gallop; guided by a transport of joy, which had fondly statter'd him with the hopes of meeting with

H 4

152 PHARSAMOND.

me at her house. Shou'd you ask how he came to find that this Clorinna, (whom he had heard of) was his daughter; listen to me and you shall hear.

The nurse, whom my mother trusted with the care of me, at my birth, had been brib'd by Tar. mino's father. He gave her a confiderable fum of money, which enabled her to live independent. She then left the place she dwelt in, and was gone no one knew whither; previous to which she had configned me to that revengeful old man; after showing him a place whither (fhe affur'd him,) I might be fent; and that it would be impossible I should ever be heard of more. Now this place was the farmer's house where I liv'd three years; and who had fo long expected, but to no purpose, my being fent for away. It happen'd that this nurse, who had not dar'd to fhew herfelf from that time, fell dangerously ill. During her sickness she had sent a person to acquaint my father, that in such a village (naming it,) was a dying woman; who could inform him of fome particulars, with regard to the child he had loft eighteen years before. This meffage was brought to my father; and you'll suppose that he came, with all possible speed, to this woman, whom he did not recollect immediately. She then told him her name. Twas to me, (faid the nurse,) that you gave your Child. Forgive, (good Sir,) a wretch, who, allur'd by money, was wicked enough to put this child into the hands of your merciless father. I concealed myself, to prevent my being examin'd; and your daughter was carried to a farmer's who lives in fuch a village. 'Twas I advis'd your father to get her convey'd thither. This farmer will be able to inform you where she now is. I implore your forgiveness, (good Sir,) for my guilt; and hope that it will be attended

attended with no other consequence, than the inspiring you with the greater joy, to find your daughter so unexpectedly; and adorn'd with every virtue.

The nurse said no more, and some time after

expired.

ird

all

of

e

0

My father was fo extremely impatient to fee me, that he would not return home, till he had first fought for me; he fetting out that instant for the house of the farmer who had taken care of me, and arriv'd at it next day. This honeff man (now far advanc'd in years,) was still living. My father ask'd him the requisite questions, to which he return'd the most satisfactory replies. He inform'd him of every particular relating to myself and the countefs, whose name and place of abode, he also let him into. My father flew immediately to Iphila's, and arriv'd there pretty late. He there was told, that Iphila had fet out from thence not long before; in order to go and pass some days at another of her country houses, several miles distant from that in which he then was. He was inform'd where this house stood; when fetting out, he arriv'd at it by five next morning. My father then alighted, with his fervants, in an adjoining wood; and flay'd there till it was time to fee Iphila; and after waiting some hours, he went and knocked at the gate of the mansion; desiring to speak with the lady of it, on an affair of the highest consequence. Word of this being brought to Iphila, she came down, when he begg'd leave to speak to her privately. When they were alone: - Madam, (faid he,) you behold a Man to whom you have done the most important fervices your goodness could possibly have indulg'd. I have infinite obligations to you; (he spoke in this manner, because he had heard at Iphila's, that I still lived with her.) In a word, (Madam,) I owe you what is dearer to me than any other earthly bleffing, fince you have H 5 been

been so gracious as to preferve my daughter. Words could never express the surprize of Iphila. who furveying my father's features, thought the discovered a strong refemblance between them and mine; which perfuaded her that all he faid was true. Alas! Sir, (faid the, turning up her eyes;) what ftrange things are all these! poor, dear girl! you indeed, will fee her; I have preferv'd her for you; and will affure you, that the earth cannot show a more amiable creature. What a piece of news, (added she) will this be for her! But then, (good Sir,) how will you exclaim against me! your daughter is, indeed, living; and I can justly affirm, that I have us'd her as though the had been my own child, ever fince The has lived with me. I have given her the best education, and indulg'd her a maternal fondness: but alas! notwithftanding all I tell you, I cannot have the pleasure of showing her to you in good health. You will find the dear girl in a most lamentable condition; you happen to come at a time when my house is fill'd with forrow. A most dreadful accident has just now happen'd in

n d p

t

l

a lover from her mind; let us fee, whether the tender impulses of nature, will not compensate for a paffion for which she burns for a man who is no more. Having faid these words, he intreated Iphila to conduct him that moment to my apartment, and accordingly they both came into it. I, at this time, was fo utterly regardless of the care which was taken to comfort me, that I scarce turn'd my eyes to look at those who stood round my bed; fo that I scarce took any notice either of my father, or of Iphila. He gaz'd at me. Some beauty he thought he faw in me, and a refemblance between my features, and those of my mother, whom he fancied then stood before him; these things struck him to such a degree, the moment he beheld me, that he cried in extafy: -- Dear, dear daughter!---- When, throwing his arms round my neck, as I lay in bed, he embrac'd me, and continued motionless upon my face. Iphila, mov'd at this affecting fight, burst into tears; during which I myfelf, tho' I had not yet look'd at my father, was greatly affected. How forcible are the ties of blood! My fond parent bedew'd my face with his tears, and utter'd a few words which fighs interrupted. My heart, as I held him fast, flutter'd strongly in my bosom.---- After folding him for some time in my arms; - My dear, dear father (fays I,) none but yourfelf, none but a parent, could raife such emotions in me.---- I then fainted away a second time. And now my father, being recovered from the mighty joy which bad engross'd all his foul, took notice of my feeble condition. Sunk to despair, he observ'd this to Iphila; and thought that I was going to expire.---Fatal joy! (faid he;) Ah! Madam, you flould have prepar'd her for this interview. Was she in a condition to embrace a parent! Heavens! this dear hapless creature, oppres'd with grief, and breathbreathing her last, could she have strength enough left, to fustain the mighty efforts with which her fondness for me must inspire her foul? Thou God. who hast restor'd her, didst thou show her to me, fo exquifitely charming, only to deprive me of her for ever!

Whilst he was thus pouring forth his angush, a medicine I took, recover'd my fenses, but not my strength. Perceiving my father in agonies as he lay by me, I turn'd my eyes, with a languishing air, towards him. Those about me plainly perceiv'd, fpite of my weakness, the strong indications I should have given him of my affection, had I not been fo prodigiously funk. I now endeavour'd to put forward my hand, in order to grasp his; when this best of fathers, perceiving my intention, advanc'd his own; upon which I carried it gently to my mouth, and killed it a thoufand times. My father, overjoy'd at my tenderness, repaid it with words that were inexpressibly kind. Do all you can (fays he,) my fweetest girl! to recover your strength and overcome your forrows. You now ought to live for the fake of a father, who should be dearer to you than any other object in the world. Ah! make him the dear returns of fondness; live, my darling child. -Whilft that he was thus breathing the fondest affection over me, I squeez'd his hand in mine. I gaz'd upon him, to affure him that, spite of the faid anguish of my foul, I, at this instant, was fusceptible to no other impression than that of the exquifite joy of beholding him again, and of being once again bleffed with his company.

He spoke to me some time longer; and I answer'd him in a dumb (as it were) but very emphatic language. Every one perceiving that I was in want

of rest, they left my chamber.

I know

fures.

I know not what conversation my father and Iphila had together. As to my self, 'twould not be in the power of words to express how strongly I was affected with this so unexpected meeting my father. There is no doubt but the resection, that I shou'd now be out of the power of Iphila, contributed as much to this joy, as the happiness of seeing him. Nevertheless, spite of the pleasure I selt, in considering that I should be freed from the tyranny of Iphila, (whom I now could not think of without horror;) the sad death of my much-lov'd Oriantes, made me resolve to abandon my-self for ever to my forrows. His mother was soon inform'd of his tragical exit, at the news of which she was inconsolable; and continued so till she died.

Some time after, my father imagin'd that I might leave this place, without endangering my health. Accordingly he refolv'd that we should set out, weak as I was. He gave infinite thanks to Iphila at our departure, declaring that he could never return the kindness I had receiv'd from her. That lady then embraced me with tears in her eyes; and seem'd to be as much griev'd at parting with me, as if I had been her own daughter: Whilst I, on the other hand, return'd her fondness, as well as I cou'd.— We then set out on our journey.

I now was got to my father's. He had told me, as we travelled, that my mother had been dead fome years, which affected me no less than it I had known her. I spent six months in my father's house, reslecting for ever on the sad fate of my adorable Orientes. The only things I now had remaining of that worthiest of men, were his picture and some letters, the dear pledges of his love. My good father employ'd his utmost endeavours to dispel my perpetual melancholy; but alas! plea-

158 PHARSAMOND.

fures, fo far from easing me, serv'd only to make me regret still more the loss of my inchanting husband.

Not long after, as I was fent into the world, to ferve as an example of the feverest rigours fate cou'd exercise; a fall which my father had from a horse in the chace, brought him to his end, after lying fick some time. These lamentable accidents, succeeding one another, made fo deep an impression on my mind, that I could not bear either the place of my birth, or my acquaintance. The only consolation now left me was, the thoughts of retiring to some sequestred place, where not a soul might know me. Accordingly I fold part of the possessions my father had left me, which amounting to a confiderable fum, I left his house disguised in the manner you now fee me; accompanied only by a female fervant, who had waited upon my mother, and whose temper was very much like mine. After roving some days, in no other view than that of flying, as it were, from myfelf, chance conducted me to this abode. I was delighted with the fituation; and as this folitude fuited the forrows which engroffed my foul, I refolv'd to dwell here, in case I could have an opportunity for it. The owner, who refided here, and did not know me, fold me his house. I have now been a twelve month in it. The only pleasure I have tasted hitherto, has been to gaze on my hufband's picture; and to perufe his letters, expressive of his passion for me. All that remains for me to say, (added Clorinna) is, to affure you that, fince my being in this retirement, nothing has given me greater satisfaction, than my having had an opportunity of obliging so agreeable a gentleman as yourself. I will even own, that I was greatly Aruck with the bare fight of you. Your features very much refemble those of the dear lover whom

I so fadly regret, and must ever do so; your air, your figure is exactly the same; and I am firmly peasuaded, from these several circumstances, that you glow with all his honour and fidelity.

Canclusion of the Story of the Anchoret,

LORINNA ended here her ftory, after pronouncing these last words in a most pathetic tone. Pharfamond, who, all the time they fat at table, had observ'd the great attention with which our fair anchoret furvey'd him, imagin'd he had guess'd the reason why she employ'd such tender expressions. He now wish'd secretly within himself. that he might be indulg'd an opportunity, in this place, of fignalizing his fidelity for Cedalifa, in the fame manner as his mafters (those great models) had done on fuch occasions. This wish, which was involuntary, might probably give rife to the graceful answer he made to Clorinna. - ' I am overjoy'd, (fays he,) to bear any refemblance to a gentleman, who was able to move fo ftrongby, a heart like your's; and I wou'd it were in ' my power, not only to revive, in you, the remembrance of fo dearly beloved an object, by a faint similitude of him; but also to gratify your fond defires, by restoring him to life.'-- I am ' greatly oblig'd to you,' (fays Clorinna, with an air in which prudence and folly were mix'd,) for this testimony of your kindness. 'Tis not necessary, in order to excite all my gratitude, that you should bring him to life; and I shall tafte an infinite pleasure in beholding him, in 'you, if you will but indulge me that happiness ' fo long as I shall defire it.'- 'This melanchoby pleasure, (replied Pharsamond, shaking his head,) would foon be succeeded by satiety. But the fatisfaction I enjoy in your company, makes

me forget (fair lady,) that it grows late; and that I deprive you of the repose, which you would have taken had I not been here.'-I have long been a stranger to rest (says she. as they walk'd together;) and I cannot fay whe-

ther I should prefer it to your convertation;

how pleafing foever this repose might be.'-By this time they were got to the garden gate. I know not what answer Pharfamond gave to this fresh attack on his heart; but am persuaded that it was fuch a one as became the noblest chevalier .-- Good night,' (my lord, faid our beautiful anchoret, as fhe parted;) ' go to bed. Take that rest which it will be impossible for me to

enjoy; and remember that you owe me the recital of your adventures."

Pharfamond, as foon as the fair-one had ended; took leave of Clorinna, and retir'd to his

chamber.

Well, (gentle reader,) are you fatisfied with this flory of our fair anchoret?---- I was sometimes, (will you answer,) greatly puzzled- What does this fignify? if I have extricated myfelf well, the more praise I shall deserve. When a person rambles he knows not whither, if he happens to guide himself tolerably, he deserves applause more than those who travel with a map. I can assure you (be this faid without vanity,) that I shall not be a little delighted with myfelf, if I can but get Pharfamond away from hence as fuccessfully. Let us therefore proceed under the direction of chance. To which of the two shall we go first, to Clorinna or Pharsamond? -- Let us speak a word or fo concerning Clorinna; and this being done, we will make a transition to Pharfamond, who will not be tired with waiting for us.

Clorinna, after bidding Pharfamond good night, went into her bed-chamber, where the was expected by her confidant, the (suppos'd) beautiful youth, the sight of whom had made such an impression on Clito, as cou'd not be term'd either love or friendship. The disguise which this fair-one had assum'd, might possibly have given rise to this mixture of

impulses.

The name of this confidant was Elifa. Her mind was very near of the same cast with that of her mistress; and the reader may have observ'd, that that of Clorinna, was a compound of reason and extravagance. To abandon her native country, with a resolution to travel the world over, in order to sooth her grief for the loss of a man she idoliz'd; to stop, and fettle in ahouse, merely because it flood in a beautiful folitude; to disguise herself in a male habit, and this merely thro' an excess of tenderness; these several things cannot be confidered as the actions of a discreet person. I myself look upon them as being a little maddish, and a critic may think them quite fo; and possibly will take me likewise to be distracted. E'en let him; for this will give me no pain; but there may, perhaps, be as much folly in his gloomy disposition, as in Clorinna's turn of mind, and that of his most humble servant, the To return therefore to my subject. - Elifa wou'd not have follow'd a woman, of Clorinna's turn, had not her own reason been tinctur'd with folly. This young woman, if we except the incidents relating to her birth, had met with as many occasions for forrow, arising from love, as her mistress. Mars had torn her lover from her arms; a cruel war having forc'd him to bid adieu to the foft found of rural pipes, to march and hear the sprightly clangor of trumpets; I mean, that this hapless swain had ferv'd his sovereign, and embark'd fo far in his quarrels, that he fell gloriously in the field. This doleful news had been carried, but too faithfully, to the weeping Eliia, a young country

country girl, whom Clorinna's mother took into the house, some months before she died. Clorinna happen'd to arrive, just at the time when the death of Elisa's lover was still recent. And presently after her father had left the world, Elisa and her mistress form'd a society, as it were, of despair; and were resolutely bent to sly from places, which call'd up the idea of their past, sad missortunes.—This is all I shall now say concerning Elisa's story.

The moment this confidant faw her mistress enter:- You have been walking a long time, (Ma-· dam, fays she).'- Dear Elifa, (replied Clorinna,) my foul is still all tumult, occasion'd by the re-· lation I have been making to this stranger, of my numberless calamities. But now tell me your real thoughts: what's your opinion of him? don't you think him vastly like my lover's picture?'-I indeed thought fo, Madam, at first, (replied Elifa;) and was perfuaded that you would be delighted with this refemblance.' - You don't 'yet know, (replied Clorinna,) what an exquisite e pleasure this gives me. So excessive was my fondness for my dear, dear Oriantes, that this image of him inspires me also with love. Yes, dearest Elisa, this stranger appears charming in my eyes. Did you observe how beautiful his person is? how graceful his utterance! how no-· ble his every gesture! his contemplative and me-· lancholy turn of mind, heighten his other charms. These are the characteristicks of a noble and tender foul, like to that which animated my adorable Oriantes. Methought that he stood before · me. I imagin'd that I spoke to him. For some moments, I could scarce restrain the fond emotions with which my heart was agitated. From thele · feveral indications, he might eafily form a judgment of the disposition of my mind. My dear · Elifa, I should no longer complain of fate, tho'

geance, would it only atone for all the evils I have suffered, by bestowing on me the heart of this stranger. I wou'd do whatever lay in my power to move it. He seem'd to me confus'd in the replies he made me; and I look upon this perplexity as a good omen. He cannot have an opportunity of putting a bad construction on the tenderness I shall discover for him; since the refemblance he bears to Oriantes, will naturally plead my apology. I therefore may own the exquisite pleasure which his presence gives me, without his blaming me for it. Heavens! what happiness have I in store, in case his sentiments do

but fympathize with mine! Don't fondly imagine, (replied Elifa,) that this stranger will stay with us. 'Tis plain, from the gloom spread over his countenance, that he either is ill treated by his mistress, or has lost her,'-Ill treated! (fays Clorinna,) fay, rather is ador'd by her; for were it possible for any woman to behold him, without being instantly fir'd with love? But (Elifa,) do not forbode any thing fi-' nifter. Perhaps he may fly that miftress. Let " me still continue in my error. I know not what vio-I lent lengths I may go, should this stranger be so cruel as to leave me. But no: I perplex myfelf without reason. He, perhaps, may love me, (tho' there should be no resemblance in the case) as "much, (or perhaps more,) than I do him.'-' You'll be fo good as to tell me all this to-morrow, (said Elisa, half asleep;) 'twill soon be daylight. Be so kind (dear Madam,) as to go to bed. I wish, as ardently as you can do, that this stranger may prompt you to leave this so-' litude; for I must tell you, that I am most heartily tir'd of it. I did not think, at our ar-

ol od motavo - Sacrat des. 10 am

rival in this place, that I ever should have wish'd to leave it. But I fee that no one ought to make vows, these being too difficult to keep. Good night, (Madam;) I am fo very fleepy, that I can't fay a word more.' - ' How happy art thou to be able to take thy rest!' replied Clorinna.- You quite tire me, (faid Elifa,) with your tattle. I beseech you (Madam) to go to bed. Eating (as the proverb fays,) gets us a stomach; and therefore going to bed may, perhaps, promote fleep. - I fleep! (cried Clorinna;) alas! can persons in love take any repose?'- Be so good (dear Madam, continues Elifa,) for my fake, for the fake of my eyes which are half shut, as to feign · sleep, and then be as distractedly in love as you please. Good night, once again. Heaven grant f that your tongue may lie fill till next morning !

Clorinna thought proper, at last, to comply with Elisa's intreaties, and said no more; if we can call, so no more, the repeating (at intervals) a thousand times the words, Heavens! Gods! enforc'd by as

many fighs.

At last, bodily fatigue got the better of the tender transports of the foul. Clorinna fell into a flumber, with a fond exclamation and a figh on her lips. Let us now therefore draw the curtain to give her an opportunity of taking her rest; and return we to our illustrious knight, (Sir Pharfamond,) whom I fee walking haitily up and down his hed-chamber. He like another Sofia, is going to fet his candle on the ground, to make a speech to it, as tho' it were a woman. He now lifts his hands up to heaven; he stops; he draws baok; he cries aloud; and all this in honour of Clorinna, whom he imagines himself addressing; emboldened by the tender compliments she had made him, at the close of her story. Pharfamond imagines to himself an inexhaustible fund of tenderness, which he supposes she

of

fo

2

m

CI

6

questions to himself; and his replies to them occafion the great agitation of mind in which I now perceive him. How delighted is he with the thoughts,
of making the most cruel returns to Clorinna's fond
passion'—' No, no,' (fair lady, cries he, intoxicated beforehand with the ungrateful part he is refolv'd to act;) ' no, I am no longer master of
' my own heart; Cedalisa, the inchanting Ceda' lisa, ingrosses it entirely. In vain are all your
' endeavours to tear her adoreable idea from my
' mind; my passion for her makes me insensible
' to the extravagant foundness you discover for me.
' Let me set out. Cruel Clorinna! what can you

hope for by withholding me?

s P - e e of - e

Let us now, (gentle reader,) admire the refemblance between our knight's folly and that of Clorinna. The former fancies, as he is musing, that Clorinna will force him to flay; whilft the fair-one supposes, that should Pharsamond resolve to abandon her, the would proceed to the most violent lengths, in order to keep him with her: let us admire, (I fay) how it comes to pass, that the minds of these two personages should be so exactly alike. But now Pharfamond grew fo vociferacious in his exclamations, that he wak'd Clito. - Who's there? (cried the latter, starting up, and rubbing his eyes.) -As he spoke these words, he perceiv'd Pharsamond, by the light of the candle. Clito them stole out of bed, whilst our Knight's back was turn'd to him: so that he could not fee his squire, who, seiz'd with a panic, and stretching forth his hand, went to feel his master. Pharsamond then turn'd about; when Clito, all over in a tremor, and pale as death, cries aloud: - Thou madman! thou devil! or whatever thou be, what canst thou want?'-Gods! (cried Pharfamond,) what are you dreaming of ! doft thou not know me! awake! 'tis I! 'tis 6 thy

thy master.'-Clito, at the found of these words: recovers; yawns ! and rubbing his eyes :- ' What diabolical incantations (fays he,) are you about, at this dead of night? who is it you are speaking to?'- With no one, my dear Clito, (replied our knight;) I'm only talking to myself. Go to bed again, or put on thy clothes, and I'll tell thee what has happen'd to me.'- I have not leifure for this yet, (replied Clito;) and must sleep four hours more.' Well, e'en go to fleep,' (faid Pharfamond) in an angry tone; 'you don't deferve the honour I intended you.'- The devil take honour! (faid Clito) when it comes at mid-" night. However, talk on, (my dear Sir;) I hear you.'-- Know that the young anchoret, (fays 'Pharfamond,) the possessor of this house, is a young lady, whom luckless love induc'd to make choice of this folitude for her abode; and the fupposed young man, whom thou hast eat with, is her confidant.'- What's this you tell me? (replied Clito;) I am now more awake than the morning-star; may I die if I did not take her to be a woman, as the and I fat at table together. -Well, (good Sir,) I must beseech you to proceed; are they fallen in love with us?'---- I have all the reason in the world, (said Pharsamond;) to believe that the mistress is really smit with me.' - Excellent (cries Clito,) just as we would have it. Our quarters are incomparable; befides, there is here no old choleric dame Margaret, nor ill natur'd mother, to turn us out of doors. Heavens be prais'd! I doat on feaffing and love, and we have both in this place. There is not a fingle squire, in any one of our books, who, were he able to speak, but wou'd wish his master might be fix'd in so finug a house as this.'--- How! (cried Pharfamond;) and would you advise me to listen to

· 1

6 8

· fi

tl

th

m

y

the paffion which the mistress of this mansion difcovers for me? and cou'd you ever think of making this place your abode?' --- What a question you ask me, (fays Clito:) we are treated here like kings, our sheets are whiter than fnow, and fofter than velvet; the miftress of the house is a most amiable woman, and her confidant also: the two fair-ones idolize us; we are young, and skilful cooks; to which let me add. that the young lady of the house is vastly handfome; now will not this tempt you?"-Gods! (cried Pharfamond) I am greatly offended at these words: How shall I renounce Ce-' dalifa ?'--- ' Now you are talking of Ceda-'lifa, (replied Clito;) this puts me in mind of both her and Fatima. Let me see. Sleep, and good cheer had drove them quite from my memory: but I was in the wrong. They are the oldest in date, as to acquaintance, with us, and therefore we ought first to go in quest of them. This is right. But then on the other hand, here are two poor fond creatures dying for us. I really am fo much puzzled, that I know not what course to take; and I would chuse to reside here, rather than determine.' No, no, Clito, (fays the knight,) there shou'd be no doubt on this occasion. To me, the most supreme felicity, without my Cedalifa, wou'd have no charms, let us therefore fly from this place.'— But hark'ee, (good Sir, fays Clito:) should you ever get into an ugly scrape again, I wou'd beg you not to pour forth your moan to me; for be affured, that I'd have no more mercy upon you, than on a bottle of wine, were I parch'd with thirst. Let me tell you, that our heroes of romance, how violent foever their flames might be, would not have been fo very scrupulous as you are, had there been such charming houses, in

i

y

4,

fo

1-

to he

cheir time, as that we are now in; and therefore But methinks you sleep as you stand; and indeed Clito spoke the truth. Pharsamond was quite exhausted, and could scarce keep upon his legs.—— Thou art in the right, says our chevalier; I really find myself satigued, and therefore will lie down on thy bed. With all my heart, (says Clito:) sleep will recover you; and, indeed, I am apt to think that you have been in a dream all the time you were talking to me. But take heart, (my dear Sir:) shut your eyes

Close, and be sure not to open them, till I bid you.'
Our two ramblers now sell into a slumber; and I wou'd have observ'd, that they strove who should shore loudest, was I not asraid of debasing the grandeur, which ought to be inseparable from a gentleman of Pharsamond's dignity, even in the most indifferent action. But whether Pharsamond and his squire snor'd or not, 'tis certain that they slept

full fix hours. I have the firm

Our chevalier wale'd first. 'Twas now broad day-light, when Pharfamond, impatient to fet out, and travel in fearch of his dear Cedalifa, pull'd Clito, who, stretching out his arms and legs, cried: - Ah! (dear fir,) you have wak'd me out of the Iweetest dream! furely the devil, who, (you know,) delights in doing ill, push'd forward your hand. 'Twould be in vain for me to run farther in fearch of what I held, for I probably may newer get hold of it again.'- What extraordinary vision (replied Pharsamond,) is this you was fa-" vour'd with?'- Listen attentively to me, (says he:) methought I faw Cedalifa and Fatima in their kitchen; the latter of whom, having a lighted candle in her hand, (whence you may viudge that it was night,) was peeping into every cupboard, every diff, to fee for victuals. Each of them held a huge piece of bread, and cut me 6 fome

•

.

fome flices; enquiring, at the same time, after your health. I then inform'd them of our excellent supper last night.-Plague! (says Ceda-· lifa;) should he continue to be fed in this manoner, He'll grow as fat as a hog.' - Fie, fie, (faid Pharfamond, interrupting him;) thou must still be in a dream; Cedalifa is too polite to employ ' fuch vile expressions.!- 'Polite! quoth-a, (replied Clito;) poor girl, in the condition the was then in, twas very natural for her to speak fo. have been informed, that, ever fince our being turn'd away from that house, her mother has kept her upon bread and water; which was the reason why she pronounc'd so emphatically these words, "He'll grow as fat as a hog."- Finish your dream, (fays Pharfamond,) and this as fast as possible.'- To return to the poor famish'd ' creatures, (for Fatima, as I heard also, had been obliged to do penance for our mad pranks; I dreamt that they could find nothing but the pitiful carcass of a fowl, and a leg of mutton (I mean the bone). They then put this carcass together with the bone, into a dish, when we fat down at table. But alas! as we were just beginning to gnaw away, in pushes dame Margaret, with a broom-flick, and levels it at my fhoulders, the moment she spied me. fakins! I parried the stroke, and ran after her, when we prefently came to blows. We fought luftily, when I tore her cap off, and the bawl'd out for her husband to come to her aid. thought he was lying in bed, and cried feebly, that he had the gout; which raising my courage, I forc'd dame Margaret to cry peccavi. The old harridan, after withing me to the devil and his 'imps, (but this she only mutter'd) fell upon her knees. Then came Fatima, who giving me a violent slap on the backfide; I ran after her, Vol. 1

d

t

d

t,

1:

of

ou

ur

rer

ne-

fa-

ays

ga

may

very

me

ome

when the wind blew her down; and I had catch'd,

her by the heel, just as you wak'd me.'

A fine dream, indeed, (fays Pharfamond,) and full worthy of thy diminutive genius!"—" What is there so ugly in it? (said Clito.) If I take away (good sir,) the carcass of the sowl, and the mutton bone; will you then consider, as nothing, the holding our best beloved by the heel?"—
Dress thyself, (said the knight,) and let us think about setting out. Every moment's delay increases my anguish, for being absent from my inchanting Cedalisa."——" But should you never meet with her more," (said Clito as he was putting on his cloaths,) your anguish would increase prodigiously." Pharsamond made no farther reply to the questions of Clito, who now was vastly cheer'd by his long sleep, and his

hopes of meeting with a good breakfast.

Both of them soon got their cloaths on; and Clito was at the last button, when the consident of the fair anchoret imagining, by the sound of their voices, that they were up, came into their room.

voices, that they were up, came into their room, and approaching Pharfamond, spoke thus:

My mistress (sir,) is waiting for you in the par-

lour. She bid me go and assure you, that she is impatient to see you, and hear your adventures.

- I'll follow you, (replied Pharsamond;) go on.

- Come hither, (says Clito,) come hither thou beautiful boy. Clito spoke these words with such an air, as gave the consident to understand, that he knew she was a woman, which made her smile.

- Well, (squire, says she,) have you past the night well? - Yes, (lovely squires replies he,) and am very much at your service. But know, that I am always seiz'd with a distemper when I wake. - What is it you want?

(replied the confidant;)—' Only some victuals and drink,' (says Colin.)—' If that be all, (replied

follow me, good squire.'— Make haste, sly then,' (my sweet girl!) says he.—And now Clito, and the confidant, breakfasted together; whilst that Pharsamond went down into the parlour, where Clorinna waited for him.

Clorinna feem'd fix'd in thought, at his coming in; but the moment she perceiv'd him, she advanc'd forward with an obliging fmile.- ' May I enquire, (fays fhe my lord,) whether you have had a good night's rest?'-- Rest (replied Pharfamond.) was not made for wretches like me.'- What misfortunes, (faid Clorinna) can possibly disturb the mind of so admirable a gentleman as you are? To behold you, one would conclude that love has none but pleasures in store for you; and that his pains could never annoy fuch as refemble 'you.' 'I am oblig'd to you, Madam, (faid Pharfamond,) for this kind compliment, but have ont the vanity to think I deserve it. But suppofing it true, that persons, like me, must always attract love; is not this passion attended with a thousand disquietudes, which the most happy lover may feel? I'll leave you yourself to judge of this, after you have heard my flory.'

Pharfamond then enter'd upon this fad tale. I don't think it necessary for me to begin it with him, as the reader has heard all he has to say. Our knight will, indeed, vary, (from me,) in his relation of some of the incidents. For instance, his departure from Cedalisa will be set forth in different colours; and the base affront put upon him in her house, will be thought a noble violence, worthy the adventures of the most illustrious knight. 'Tis not that Pharsamond is a braggadochio, who is conscious that the adventures related by him are false. Our knight wou'd be blameless, were he guilty of no other fault than that of fibbing; and it

may justly be affirmed, that (if on one hand,) his head has loft the good fense it once posses'd; his heart, (on the other,) has made fuch acquifitions. in generofity, greatness, and probity, as more than compensate for the loss of his understanding: If. therefore, he should deviate from the truth, in the account he gives of incidents, this must be ascribed to a defect of understanding, and not as flowing from vanity. After all, either the adventures themfelves, or his manner of telling them, will be found entertaining; as for instance, his meeting with Cedalifa in the wood; his bloody combat in the garden; his wounds; his fainting away; and many other particulars, where his artless vanity may do him great honour.

But I now hear him conclude his story, and perceive Clorinna oppress'd with grief. The passion which Pharfamond discovers in the course of his tale, for his Cedalifa, proves as an arrow to Clorinna's heart. Her glances feem to tell Pharfamond, that she is exceedingly griev'd to find, that another object has engross'd his foul; and our chevalier, (to aggrevate her forrows still more,) concludes his relation, with vowing eternal constancy to his mistress. - I must go in search of her,

* (Madam, fays he;) and free her from the captivity, in which the doubtless must be held, by

the barbarous female appointed to guard her. I

burn with impatience, to give her the strongest

testimonies of my passion for her.'

Alas! (my lord, replied Clorinna, with a languishing air,) you perhaps may have lost her for ever; fo that all your care, all your pains, would be ineffectual. Your enemies must have taken

measures to defeat all your designs; and therefore, (my good lord) go not in quest of a lady,

the meeting of whom is fo very precarious; and

who, (how violent foever her paffion may be for

vous) has a heart you can never enjoy; but flay here fome time, and spare yourself a trouble you otherwise must be put to. The tranquill ty of this abode will reftore your foul to its wonted calm, which you will not find in any other place. I'll do all I can to divert you. Solitary fcenes are your delight, and where could you find one more delicious than that you are now in? I don't speak of the company you will enjoy here; but 'twill be infinitely charming, if the bleafure I shall taste in seeing you, can but touch your foul.'-Saying these last words, she cast down her eyes. Pharfamond understood their meaning, when supposing himself, (as well as he cou'd) in the fituation of those renown'd heroes of romance, who, by the fidelity they ow'd to their mistresses, were thrown into such a perplexity as they expressed, either by silence or a sudden blush. Our chevalier, (their faithful copist) for fear he should fail in imitating them, continued filent a few minutes, and then blush'd. Clorinna waited for his answer: she wanted a few words from him, and cou'd not be easy till he had explain'd himself.— I have not the least reply from you, (my lord, faid ' she,) and yet you heard me. 'Twould be only losing time, for me to inform you, in dark and distant terms, of the inclination I have for you, Alas! the refemblance you bear to the man I once idoliz'd, revives, (unhappily for me!) in my heart, all its wonted tenderness. Cou'd you but be fensible of the excess of this tenderness, and correspond with it; you then would look upon this heart as too worthy of being neglected. 'Tis plain, (my lord) that I don't diffemble with 'you. Be so good therefore as to explain yourfelf. Must I be so wretched, as to meet with ingratitude from you!' This

This declaration was too clear and diffinct, for Pharfamond to pretend ignorance any longer: but he knew how to oppose such attacks as were but half declar'd; he likewise cou'd combat those which were open, and levelled directly at the heart: and the reader will find, that he imitated very exactly his noble models on this occasion.

"I have heard you," (Madam, replied our chevalier in a grave tone, and flanding almost motionless:) but did not think proper to make any reply; hoping that my filence would discover to vou, very plainly, what I meant by it; but tince you will force me to answer, recollect the feveral things I have told you; and fay to yourfelf, what decorum will not permit me to utter before you. You entertain a passion for fome fair-one, (replied Clorinna;) I take this for granted; but then you are not fure of finding her; and I now offer you a heart, the conquest of which will fave you all the pains you otherwife must take, in fearthing after your mistress. · I adore these pains, (replied our cruel knight;) and, were they to prove my death, this would be infinitely more agreeable (as I should have nothing to repent of;) than to prolong it, in the enjoyment of the greatest felicity, but embitter'd with the severest reproaches. Let me therefore, Madam, depart from this place. Stop not a hapless wretch, whom ill fortune oppresses. Twould be impossible for my heart to result your attacks, was it not intirely engroffed by another object.'---Our knight then flarted up on a fudden, as one resolutely determin'd to leave the house. Now if the reader will but allow me a few moments, to make a fhort transition to Clito and Elifa, I'm persuaded that he will have no cause to repent of his indulgence.

This

This pair of confidants were now got into the kitchen. Some of the best wine in the cellar had been drawn for Clito, who, himself, had taken care to lay a piece of meat on the gridiron. After taking five or fix draughts, the heaviness, (usual to people who have not broke their fast) left him. By my life, fweet girl! (fays he to Elifa with a bumper in his hand which he was going to toss off to her honour;) you have a very good birth here. To compleat it, nothing is wanting but a jovial young man-' like yourself,' (replied Elifa, who was charm'd with our squire's blunt manner of address.)-' Confess the truth, you little baggage, (replied he;) would you not gladly keep us here, was it in your power to do fo? but we are not like the rest of our sex; we have already got our cargo of love, and will subfift upon it as long as we live.' - What's all this? (Mr. fquire, replied the confidant,) do you value yourselves for your constancy. How value myself for it? (replied he;) pray who do you take me for? don't you know that we knights and fquires, (for there's no great difference between us, as to rank,) make a vow that we will possess every good quality, and constancy in particular? What a pox !- I indeed, will confess that this is the most savage of all the virtues. The squires of antient times must necessarily have made a vow to practife it, in their very cradles; and I am perfuaded (fair maid,) that when they met in their travels, with faces beautiful as your's, their constancy fat as heavy on their hearts, as a burthen of two hundred weight wou'd upon their shoulders. But then glory, (or whatever you may please to term it) is not a mere ' shadow; and when we make a brave refistance, in this respect 'tis not on a trifling account. My · name I 4

176 PHARSAMOND.

name will, one day or other, fly to the extremities of the earth; and I cannot but fay, I am delighted to think that people, an hundred years hence, will know my name; and should you be then living you'll bear witness to the truth of all I now fay.'- To what purpose is your care for this, (faid the confidant,) fince you'll . then be dead, and confequently be quite insensible to this honour or glory? but good Mr. fquire. - s mind me now: If you are struck with any other woman, don't rob yourfelf of the pleasure of declaring it.' ---- Be fo good as to hold your · peace, (replied the fquire;) farewel glory and renown, if you go on in this manner. Cruel, cruel woman! let me be glorious.' - What's this I fee? (cried the confident,) methinks you begin to foften, (Mr. squire;) but could I believe you to be in earnest, I would love you four times as dearly as I do now. You love me * then already? (replied he;) Heavens! how mighty a loss shall I sustain? sure, no squire had ever fo precious a wind-fall. But (thou heart of mine!) fill keep up thy courage; four or five bumpers more of wine, and then I'll draw thee out of this quagmire.' -- No, no, (good Mr. squire, faid the confidant,) we will not part with you in this manner. I fee plainly that you do love me. You don't fay true, (fays he, rifing up;) I will not do fo much injury to Fatima; and if my heart can be fo stupid as to entertain the least spark of affection for you, e'en let the brute keep it; for I s myself must declare off, and will have nothing to do with it.' Twould be in vain for vou to struggle, (faid she,) you will love me; and, if any regard is to be had to appearances, we both look as tho' we should hereafter be very fond of each other.' - Ah! my dear mafter! allers to a rea sir somer site fimy terior in e e contracti

my most excellent knight! Sir Pharsamond, (cried the squire,) did you but know the horrid danger to which I am expos'd, you'd fly hither to my refcue, and carry me on your shoulders. Should your mind be weak as mine, 'twill be impossible for us to have strength to fiinish our journey. As to myself, my poor legs can fcarce support me. Wou'd the devil had this house of your's! were it not for this curfed abode, we fhould have got more bays, than would have ferv'd the feveral cooks in Christendom !'-6 All this does not fatisfy me, (faid the confidant;) tell me therefore at once, do you love me or ' not?' - 'Yes, dear devil of my heart, ' replied he,) I do love you; be satisfied with this confession, which wrings my foul more than 'a thousand pounds would that of an usurer.'— · Since you do love me, said she, (Mr. squire) I'll be fo frank as to declare, that I don't hate you. ' Your mafter will certainly be smit with my mistrefs, and we all four shall be vastly fond of one another. What think you now of that?"-'This wou'd be charming, (faid Clito;) and I'd freely give ten of the strongest hairs of my head, were it possible for my good master to be forc'd to take root in this house. I should be proud to ' imitate so illustrious an example, but then you entertain me with very poor hopes.'-We have all the reason in the world, (said the confidant) to beblieve, that my mistress will do every thing in her power to keep him here.'- I grant this, (faid Clito;) but my mafter is as courageous as a lion. I know him to a tittle. The object of his affection is in another place; and, rather than continue here, he wou'd go on crutches to feek her. However, a thought is just come into my head, which being put into execution, will force

him to flay. But then, mum !- Run; cut the girths of our horses. He'll be put to a fine nonplus when he is for fetting out, and I'm of opinion that he won't care to go upon the hoof; there not being one example of a knight's ever at-* tempting to travel on foot; run therefore, and make all the hafte possible.'-These words were scarce out of his mouth, but the confidant ran to the stables. or rather flew thither. She then did every thing purfuant to Clito's advice. But returning from the stable. good Heavens! what a fight did fhe behold! - Her miftrefs, all in tears, and using her utmost endeavours to stop Pharsamond, who would force himself from her. She flew to acquaint Clito with this; and inform'd him also of what she had done concerning the horses. - Well (fays he,) fince my master cannot be prevail'd upon to flay here; for fear · left he should suspect my having an understanding with you; the moment he orders me to faddle our horses and follow him, you shall pretend to ftop me. Upon this I'll make a violent ftruggle, and you shall tear my sleeve. I'll feem quite furpriz'd to find our girths cut, and fall into a terrible paffion. I then will pretend to fet out on foot, pilgrim like, with a staff in my hand. My mafter won't offer to follow me, for the most necessary thing, in our profession, is a horse. You shall stop us both; I'll let you drag me along; in a word, we'll leave the rest to fate. See now, (you little dear huffy,) what I undertake merely for the fake of obliging you. O love! infidious love! but for thee, what a great man fhould I have been!' - No more of your speeches, I beseech you, (says the confidant,) to love, but go to your mafter. I hear him still contending with my miftress. Appear therefore, good Mr. fquire. I will fo, (fays he;) but be fure don't forget what I told you.' Saying

Saying these words, he advanced into the courtyard, and was followed a moment after by Elifa. when his own eyes faw what she had inform'd him of, I mean Pharfamond flying from Clorinna. - Cruel man! (faid this doating mad-woman,) will not my tears, will not my forrows, move you! dear, dear Oriantes! (for ' you, my lord, are his very picture,) alas! Clorinna speaks; turn, turn your eyes towards " me.' - ' Heavens!' (cried our knight, hearing these words,) ' deliver me from such importunate ' transports! Let us fet out, (Clito;) rouze, rouze, and faddle our horses this instant. Leave me, (I ' fay;) a heart, like that of generous Pharfamond, is a stranger to falshood; Cedalisa engrosses it, and shall do so for ever.

Whilst Pharsamond was speaking thus, his stare was so very surious, that one wou'd have thought he was going distracted; nor did he appear less frantick in his gestures. But how delicious, (to him) was this perplexity, and these sad extremities I no lady had ever given her knight a more signal opportunity to prove his constancy. The tryal to which Clorinna put him, was attended with all the circumstances suitable to an heroic adventure.

And now Clito, who had been commanded to get the horses ready, return'd, leading them by a halter; and holding the bridle in his hand, which he told Pharsamond, could no longer be made use of.— 'Things are come to a fine pass! (says he.) Here Sir; saddle, bridle, and mount your horse with this trumpery. Gods! furies! (cried Pharsamond;) but 'tis no matter. In vain you put my constancy to so severe a trial: for know the shame must all be your's, since you will never be able to triumph over me.

'Charming! (good Sir, cried Clito;) let us leave these two huffies, who would gladly chop off our glory's head. We, indeed, have lost all our horfe-tackle; but come, let us, rather than

yield, fave our virtue. Only follow the bright

example I shall fet you.

Having faid thefe words, he was preparing to leap on his nag, when the young confidant endeavour'd to stop him, as had been agreed upon between them, but did not employ ftrength enough.

O fie! (whisper'd he to her,) your arms are weaker than reeds. Exert yourfelf, (I fay,) my

good girl.'- I do all I can (replied the confidant, in his ear;) and I cou'd not do more

unless I were to drub you, or scratch your face." Give, (faid he,) fome thumps upon my hat, call me all to pieces; ftop my horfe.

This conversation between the confidant and the fquire was pretty short, though it may be thought a little prolix. Clito feem'd to use his utmost endeavours to mount on horfeback, whilft Elifa acted her part to a miracle. 'O rogue! (fays the,) thou fhalt not go. How can you both be fo ungrateful, (wretches as you are!) after feafting to deliciously as you have done at our house?" ---Whilst Elifa was thus spending her breath, Clorinna strove to stop Pharfamond, who bawl'd to Clito, to open the gate. By this time all the fervants were got together in the court-yard, amaz'd at what they faw and heard; they not knowing till now, that their fuperior was a woman dreffed in man's clothes. They then imagin'd, by Clorinna's actions, that our two men had infulted her; or elfe that they must have used her ill, fince she had endeavoured to stop them. They now were come forward, when the cook, with his grazy fifts, feiz'd Pharfamond by the colfar; but our knight, being young and vigorous, flipt out of his hands; drew his fword and whirl'd it round like the fails of a windmill. During this, another fervant run and fnatehed

up

mp a spit, when smiting Pharsamond's sword with it, he broke it in two. Our knight, after this attack let sall his sword; when slying at the sellow, who was armed with the spit, he forc'd it out of his hands. How disgraceful a weapon was this for a knight, whom the noblest sword ought to have arm'd! however, 'twas reslexion and judgment which prompted him to take up the spit on this occasion; he being persuaded that the heroes of romance would have acted just as he had done, if in the like circumstances.

This spit, therefore, wielded by so powerful an arm, drove away all the enemies, and Clorinna did not dare to come near him. Clito judging, from his mafter's anger, that he would not perhaps be clear-fighted enough to diftinguish him from an enemy, ran and hid himself behind a wall; he calling to Elifa, who, by this time, had given over her tham struggle with Clito, for fear of receiving a wound from the spit. The squire, all the time that Pharfamond was flourishing his new weapon in the air, made a thousand times signs to Elifa, to run towards him; and then as the wall hid him from his master, take him (Clito) by the throat; to give the latter an opportunity of fainting away, which accident, he hop'd, would oblige the knight to flay; but the was too much intimidated by the fight of the spit.

By this time Pharfamond had no more enemies to encounter with, they all having fled his mighty arm; but then the pleasure he felt, in this conquest over all his enemies, was too delightful for him to leave it so soon. The instant his courage was properly heated, in vain his enemies endeavoured to save themselves by slight; the anger which sparkled in his eyes, supplying the place of an adversary. The secret admiration in which he held himself threw a mist before his eyes, and made him imagine several combatants; and he was not undeceived, till his

firength

Arength quite forfook him. But now, throwing his eyes around, he perceived nothing, except doors half open'd, at which the vanguish'd scarce dar'd to peep out their heads. Immediately Pharfamond throwing the most dreadful glances round, call'd aloud for his squire to lead the horses out of the courtyard, and open the gates. But alas! no fquire appear'd. Pharfamond was upon the point of threatning to pull down the house, when directing his eves to the wall, who should he soy but Clito; but, (good heavens!) in what posture was our squire feen? even firetch'd on the ground, and as a man from whom life was fled. Pharfamond thinking him really dead, advanc'd towards him with an air of veneration, which he imagin'd due to a squire, whose courage, and zeal for his master's service, had cost him his life. However, the arch wag was in as good health, at least, as his master might be. Clito cou'd not prevail upon himself to quit so very expeditiously, good quarters; and he was highly delighted with the young confidant; though the artifice employ'd by him, to force his mafter to flay where they were, had been defeated by Pharfamond's valour and inflexible heart. But Clito was fo ftrongly inspir'd by the passion of love, and the charms of good eating, that it was impossible but these must suggest some expedients. He had hit upon one that fail'd; and the reader faw him make figns to Elifa, for her to take him by the collar, that he might have an opportunity of feigning a fwoon. Elifa's fear had, indeed, render'd his expedient abortive. But then, what did he do? The moment that he perceiv'd his mafter's rage was cool'd, and that he did not lay about him fo luftily, he threw himself along the ground; taking it for granted that our knight, spying him in this plight, would suppose that he had receiv'd some pole that the hot deadly blow-

And now Pharfamond turn'd his squire, to examine in what part he might be wounded; when our knight was greatly furpriz'd not to fee the least figns of blood, which was the only circumstance wanting in the adventure; for it must be confes'd, that a bloodless combat, tho' ever so dangerous, cannot be confidered as heroic. Pharfamond, was, at this inftant very forry that Clito, (fince he was dead.) had not been fo glorious as that one drop, (at least) of blood should flow from him. - Alas! (faid our dolorous knight) my fquire has loft his bife, in my caufe, without enobling his death, by fhedding blood. But no matter; we are to accufe fate for it, and not his courage: and fince necessity forc'd, even me to defend myself with the most inglorious weapon; can I be furs priz'd, that Clito's death should be no less difhonourable, than the defence the great Pharfa-" mond made?"

After these mournful accents, or rather this dirge. which Clito found fo very comical, that it had like to have call'd him from the dead; our knight was fome time in doubt, whether it would be proper to leave Clito where he found him; or lift him, as well as he could, on one of the horfes. But the tender affection he bore his fquire, prevail'd over the fear of what the vulgar might fay, upon feeing a knight laying a dead body cross his horse. Tho this was an act infinitely below the gravity and dignity of persons of his character; he yet thought there were occasions, when a hero, in condescending, discover'd more virtue than meanness. Having made these reflexions, he drew forward one of the horses, and began to lift up Clito by the feet; but (alas!) as the fpit, which he still grasp'd, and did not care to let go for fear of accidents, would not allow him the free use of his hands, Clito's head boune'd

boune'd hard against the ground. And now the violence of the blow recalling the pretended dead man to life, Clito roar'd out as loud as he could bawl. Immediately Pharfamond ftruck with hor-For, let him fall as though he had been a mill-ftone. This fecond shock forc'd our hapless squire to roar out again; but, to fay the truth, he richly deferv'd all these knocks. In the mean time our knight, whose hair stood an end through horror (in case; however, his head was not shav'd, or that he did not then wear a perruque;) our knight, (I fay,) found all his fear vanish, at this second cry fet up by his squire. - My dear, dear Clito, (fays he,) what most unaccountably wicked blow could reduce thee to fo lamentable a condition? - Ah! good Sir, a clinch'd fift, thrust into this neck of mine, occasioned so barbarous a difafter,' (replied Clito, exasperated to find all his expedients defeated; and that he should, at last, be forc'd to leave an excellent table, and the young confidant.) - But come, rouze, Clito, (said • Pharfamond;) let us leave this mansion, and · mount as well as we can on horseback.'-Indeed and indeed,' (faid the fquire,) whose heart was full, as the fquabble they had had, made it abfolutely necessary for them to shift their quarters; it must be confess'd, that you have treated the good lady of this house very ill.'--- ' No more of your remonstrances, (replied Pharsamond,) I

Saying these words, he gaz'd round, when brandishing siercely the spit, whose disgraceful form he had forgot by this time, he himself went and open'd the court-yard gate. Clorinna, at this satal creaking of the hinges, put forth her distant voice, which schoed shrill through the hall.

Manuar .

Pharfamond now found his heart mov'd, but not with an emotion of love. He only felt a generous compassion, for the forrows he had brought, involuntarily, on this ill fated lady. - Do you hear, fir, (fays Clito, the tears almost starting from his eyes,) that poor lady! O how greatly do I pity her! fee her waiting woman, fallen down by her in a fwoon; otherwise she would have cried louder. Pox on the severe laws, enjoyn'd by lovers of former ages! How would they have been puzzled in so deplorable a case!'-Pharsamond was already mounted on his horse, which he held by the mane. But now Clito feeing, too plainly, that all his hopes were defeated; cried;-' Come, sir, let us e'en go, since you are resolved upon it; but in all probability, the first hill we get upon, we shall roll down it like two barrels,' said in this train near the continuents reputed the distingt

The end of the fourth PART.

to a real side and decompanies of the collection when erodetal specimos cera unidamidad per Xo Male from which to go lover and when which the on worth and a slift of the controlled of the payon through and white there is not a contract Rado to our business of the state of

Consider the figure of the wife, his man are the said and thurst or influencial subso to table

entimeted the man is your problem. to complain the first and dependent to the and the contraction of the contraction of the state of a control and accompanie within a city and the control control control of c. all assisted and the will be done with an other enough of the language from a said of the demonstration a committee that we do and experience the form that a more a

La creation and the same and the PHARand to dopp all adjusted from the

PHARSAMOND.

a sweep; when the we

PART V.

HARSAMOND's foul was fo fully engros'd, by this last adventure, that he did not once think about leaving the spit, which he still carried in his hand. The cook (who supposed, that our chevalier, as soon as he shou'd be got on horseback, wou'd leave it at the door,) was come, the moment he heard him ride away, to take it in; but gazing on Pharfamond, who by this time was got at a confiderable diffance, he perceiv'd that he still grasp'd it. -- 'Oons! (cries he to the rest of the servants,) not a mouthful of roastmeat shall we eat to day. See how that madman there carries off my spit! He holds it as fiercely, on his faddle-bow, as though he were going to run in the ring. He'll certainly be taken for fome miserable masker, attended by his servant.

Clito, like to those who can scarce tear themfelves from what they love; and who endeavour, even in their flight, to enjoy still a little longer the object they doat upon; could not forbear looking back, at intervals, towards this dearly-beloved house; when he spied all the domesticks, with the young consider among the rest. The cook observing Clito turn about, made signs with his hand, for him to desire his master to return the spit. The foure, imagining that the fervants called them ; -We were quartered (fays he to Pharfamond,) with the best people in the world; you were very near knocking them all down, and yet they beckon us to go back. I shall never forget that charming pretty house, though I were to live to the age

of Mathuselah.

Whilft he was talking in this manner, Pharfamond's horse, which was young and mettlesome, took fright at feeing a heap of very white stones. The creature began to fly up and down; when Pharfamond now run away with, did not dare to jump from his steed, for fear of hurting himself. All he could do was to remove, by brandishing his fpit, the boughs which impeded his career. Clito's horse seemed, on this occasion, to be the same, with regard to that of Pharfamond, as the fquire was with respect to the knight; for the instant the chevalier's courser began to gallop; the astonish'd Clito, who did not know the reason why his master rode to swiftly, found his horse run spontaneously; and follow, full speed, the rapid course of the chevalier's winged steed.

Clito, reflecting that his neck was in danger, fince his nag was running away with him, cried as loud as he cou'd bawl, to the knight to stop his horse; he not knowing that Pharsamond was under the same difficulty with himself. Our chevalier, on the other hand, endeavour'd, but in vain, to make Clito understand, that he was not master of his courfer; the wind and the noise made by their horses feet, preventing their riders from hearing one another. But now a pretty large house, standing in a bottom, the court-yard door whereof happen'd to be open, put an end to the confusion our ramblers were in; and at the same time to the mad career of their steeds, which stopp'd on a sudden in

this court-yard.

The attitude in which Pharfamond appear'd, (he still holding the spit,) was very ridiculous. And now a country fellow came forth, who setting up a laugh, ask'd the knight whether he was come to

fpit their turkies?

Clito hearing these words, fell a giggling, upon his observing the spit, which till then had been unperceiv'd by him. This caus'd the ruftic to burst into a horse-laugh. However it had no other effect than to swell the knight's pride, and make him wield his mock lance with still greater gravity. A woman belonging to the fame house, hearing the two laughers, ran out; when, the instant she cast her eyes on Pharfamond and the fpit, she join'd in concert with the rustic and Clito. She bursts, she weeps; and, every time she looks at the knight, breaks into a loud laugh. The mirth of the country woman, drew two little boys from an ox stall; as likewife an old man, who was dragging thence a cow, in order to drive it to pasture. They now gaze on our knight, thus completely equipp'd for a tournament; when the little clowns fell a hooting and laughing, till they almost split their fides. And as to the old man, he feemed to excel himself; he surveying Pharsamond from top to toe, and shaking his chin all the time.

But now all these waggs imagine, by Pharsamond's action, that he is going to be downright angry; he asking his squire, the reason, why those clowns, as well as he himself, were so verry merry at his expence.— Don't you see the cause of it? (replies Clito;) only look at the lance which arms so mansfully your hand; a lance died red; but with what? why with chickens blood, or that of some other equally noble creature. Now pray, who cou'd forbear tittering at such a spectacle? — Our chevalier hearing these words, recover'd himself; when the sight of the lance forc'd a

blufb

blush from, and made him laugh at the same time. but with a fort of gravity. --- " Here take it. (fays he,) Clito; 'twas absence of mind made me hold this weapon to long.' -- 'I take it! (replied the squire,) what wou'd you have me do with it? e'en throw it on the ground, for we have onothing to roaft.' You're right, (cried Pharfamond,) who thereupon flung it from him. Where are we? (continues he;) Ask whose house this is.' - Our squire then alighted, and going up to the clown: - ' Who does this house belong to?' (fays he;)--- 'It belongs,' (replied the peafant, who cou'd go no farther.) - Pharfamond's lance had made, at first fight, such an impression upon him, as excited his whole attention. But on the ruftick's perceiving the fad plight their horfes were in; whenever he attempted to cry, it belongs. - (in answer to Clito's question,) an inclination to laugh, cut his answer in two; and did so every time he endeavour'd to fay, it belongs Oh! oh! fays Clito, (staring at him;) I suppose 'my hat's put on the wrong way;) and 'tis this must make you laugh so very immoderately.'---At these words the clown, who strove, but all in vain, to reply, show'd (by pointing, with his finger,) what it was that made him so vastly jocose. Clito understood his meaning that instant, upon which he turn'd his head to look at Pharfamond's horse; when finding this spectacle altogether as whimfical as the other, he roar'd as loud as the clown, and this he did, till Pharfamond advancing, gave them to understand, that he was quite tir'd with their nonsense; and 'twas no wonder, indeed, that he should have lost all patience by this time. Such incidents were of too burlesquue a kind for our chevalier; his adventures did not succeed one another with an equal pace. If he met with one that pleas'd

pleas'd him, 'twas attended with a thousand trifling little circumstances, which no ways suited the digmity of his profession. He reflected, that not a fingle requifite was wanting, for him to be in a plenary fituation; I mean, fuch an one as perfectly refembled that of the famous knights of romance. His mifirefs lov'd him; the was beautiful; and illustrious in her descent, as he verily believ'd. She was in captivity; (the first article,) which might give birth to a thousand situations. He was fearthing for her. (a fecond article,) whence the most tender disquietudes, and the deepest forrows might arise. What was wanting, for him, to advance through every ftage of glory? And yet, he was forc'd to combat with cooks! how ftrong a contrast was there, between this adventure, and between the tender paffion which a Belle, difguis'd under a male habit, had discover'd for him at first sight! then, he had been forc'd to defend himself with a most infamous weapon, a spit! he had rode three miles, without a bridle, and with the rest of his tackle in miserable order. These several things shock'd his pride; he not remembering to have ever read any particulars, in the lives of his illustrious models, which form'd fo monstrous an affemblage; the most minute accidents they met with, being ever fuitable to the dignity of their character. Pharfamond fought for the reason, why his adventures should eternally be chequer'd with grotefque incidents; however, as, after strictly examining his own conduct, he did not discover any circumstance, in himself, which might occasion these groveling incidents; he thence thought it but natural to suppose, that the most illustrious lovers had been no less expos'd, than himself, to such slight accidents; that these were almost inseparable from their way of life; and that the only reason why they are not mention'd in their respective histories, was, that the authors of them,

in relating the lives and amours of these famous men, had imagin'd it incumbent on them to treat of fuch particulars only, as belong to the great and the marvellous. In a word, that mankind were no longer accustom'd to see lovers of their fort; and that he ought not to wonder, that as men were less accustom'd, than formerly, to the respect due to them; they thence should give occasion, (by the aftonishment they discovered at beholding knightserrant,) to the feveral comic incidents with which their adventures were blended.

Pharfamond, (will some critic say,) is finely fituated indeed, to have an opportunity of making fuch deep reflexions. There is no doubt, but that a hero of his character, ponders on all things, and in all places. By the way, the reflexions I put into our knight's mouth, were much fooner form'd in his brain, than they feem to be when described on paper; for Pharlamond weigh'd, argu'd. and judg'd, in the twinkling of an eye, the many things I could not express, without employing a multitude of words.

During this interval, Clito and the clown, who had been half dead with laughing, at last recovered their phlegm; when the peafant, to atone in the most generous manner possible, for his ridiculing Pharsamond, spoke thus to him: --- 'Alight, good Sir; the roads which lead from this place are bad; your horses wou'd play you an ugly trick; you might fall with them, and so break your necks. Stop here fome hours, and we will endeavour to mend your tackle. In the mean time, pray come into a room, and take a glass of wine. The people of the house are very civil folks.

At this invitation our knight, whose gloomy reflexions imprinted a favage air on his countenance, Imil'd at the ruftick's civility; and I don't doubt

n

e

at

u

n, ia

but that Pharfamond confider'd this clown as a man of confequence. He therefore accepted, with the utmost gravity, of the invitation, but still continued on horseback. Clito, ever fince the word wine had been mentioned, thought each moment an hour, whilft he was bound to his faddle. But my good Sir (fays he,) do you · mistake your horse's saddle for an easy chair? alight then quickly, fince you are defir'd to do ' fo. - I waited, (replied Pharfamond,) for your coming to help me down; every thing should be done regularly; and you ought never to omit duties of this fort.' - Odzooks! (replied the fquire,) I did not once think about it. I ' humbly ask your pardon; and could not imagine that you wou'd have dreamt of ceremonies, at a time when both of us are fo wretchedly equipp'd. But no matter. Come; jump. -- Oons! (faid · Clito, the inftant his mafter was got down;) and fo you would have fat all night on horsekack, had I not been here to help you.'-- ' If this had been the case, (replied the chevalier,) I wou'd have done without you; but I must be-' feech you to have a better memory next time; and not be thus wanting in your reverence to " me.'-- The clown then gave their horses to 2 little boy, ordering him to lead them into a stable; after which he himself conducted our ramblers into a fort of hall or parlour, where people us'd to dine.

This peasant manag'd a large farm, belonging to the lady who own'd the house, and was not yet stirring. 'I wou'd show you, (says he,) all our 'rooms, (which are handsome enough) were not our lady, and her daughter, in bed. But in the mean time, I'll go and fetch you some breakfast.'

Good! (says Clito;) I had much rather fee victuals, than your rooms.'

11

e

u

o :

d

it

d

I

ne

1

d.

id

;)

k,

115

I

e-

to

2

e;

n-

ď

to

yet

ur

not

the

a.'

her

he

The peafant went that instant for some refreshments. Pharfamond had feated himfelf, and was wrapt in meditation. -- ' Every thing, (cries he,) opposes my felicity! Fate seems to conspire against me, and to postpone the joy I shall taste, in feeing again my dearest Cedalisa; yet my conflancy will triumph over the obstinacy with which I am attack'd by my ftars.'- Your conflancy, (fays Clito, interrupting him,) is of a quite different complexion from my appetite; for this, when perfecuted by hunger, is always weakeft.'- You take strange liberties! (replied Pharfamond, rifing in a rage;) you behave very indecently, let me tell you. Still you know how 'you ought to act; and if I don't diffinguish myfelf from the herd of mortals, I do this merely to fee what lengths you wou'd prefume to go in your impertinence. But pray now have done with it, or leave me.'

The ruftic came in, just as Pharfamond was ending his sharp reprimand. The former brought, in one hand, a huge bottle of wine; and in the other a loaf and butter. Clito in raptures at the fight, cried (taking off his hat;) -- I hope it will be no offence, (good fir,) should I, now I'm hungry, be so bold as to eat and drink before 'you?'-Our chevalier made no reply to this question. Clito, interpreting this filence in his favour, immediately pour'd forth a bumper; drinking (first) to the health of the farmer, who anfwered; --- 'Much good may it do you,' and then to the knight. — Come, fir, (fays Clito,) presenting his master with a bumper which he had pour'd out for him; 'Let us ring our glaffes; this reconciles the stomach, as well as enemies. You fhall see how ready I'll be, from this time forward, to attend upon you at a whiftle; and I will not be wanting, even a hair's breadth, in my du-VOL. I. ty.

ty.'--- Drink, drink, (cries Pharfamond;) did you ever hear of knights ringing the glasses with their squires?'---- I don't care for that, (my dear sir, replied Clito, taking off both bumpers, and belching;) humility makes men great. But you may be as proud as you please, I shan't regard it.----But come, (my kind landlord,) is your butter good?'-----Indeed is it, (replied the

farmer,) when eaten.'

As Pharfamond continued penfive all the time: - Nay, nay, (cries the peafant,) dear, fweet fir, don't be vex'd: I have got fome old accourrements; and will exchange them for your's, provided you'll give me a small matter to boot.'-" My lord," (replied our knight very hastily; and without confidering whether the man on whom he bestow'd that title, was really so or not;) ' as my griefs will not permit me to converse with any person; I must beg you to let me muse a little with myfelf.' That you may (replied the farmer, taking off his hat;) and this will be an infallible way for you not to quarrel with any one.' Then turning about towards Clito;-Do you come, (adds he,) from a country, where the farmers are lords?'- Indeed don't I (replied · Clito;) but the affair is, my mafter mistook you for another person.'- For another person! (said the peafant;) Do you know my good friend, that I was within an ace, of being fon-in-law to the e nephew of our parish priest; I mean, he who was to have been fo, and who would have forc'd me to marry his niece; but (body o'me!) I had fix'd my love on limping Peg; and fo preferr'd her to all the riches and honour her kindred would have heap'd upon me.'— Odfbodlikins! (cries Clito,) you then were within an ace of being a great man.'- Indeed was I, (replied the peafant;) and be affured, that I have refus'd of-

· fers still much more advantageous. I once was a handsome fellow; as you may see; (continued he, fetting his arms a kimbo, and ftrutting his legs.) 4 I dwelt between four villages; and all the e girls living in them, made strong court to, and were mad to have me for their husband; but, faith and troth, I could not marry all the four villages at once.'----That you cou'dn't, (cried (Clito;) for where would you have found a house · large enough to hold all your family? How did vou do then?'---- How I did? (replied the peafant;) odsflesh! I have been so many years a widower, that I have forgot how I did; but ' thank God for all things.'--- ' Had you espous'd (faid Clito,) all the villages which made court to vou, you must have been marrying your whole bife time, and your wives would have buried vou .'- True, (replied the farmer,) but I have brought things to such a pass, that I have got four children; and I fancy that a fever will foon carry off two of them.'- God rest their souls! ' (faid Clito.) - What can't be cur'd, must be endur'd, (replied the farmer,) I then shall have only two living; and, should they go after the rest, why then I shall have no children at all: but we must thank God for all things.'-In this case, (said Clito,) yourself only will be alive; and you (very possibly,) may go after the rest; but we must thank God for all things.'--'That's a different matter, (replied the peafant,) I am necessary to the world. Was it not for my care and labour, these lands round about our house, would not bring in a quarter of the money they now do; you fee that it is quite otherwife with regard to my children. But let us take a fresh sup. Here's to you honest lad,'-Done (fays Clito,) pledging him. K 2

By this time the bottle was emptied, when Pharfamond started up on a sudden .- Farewel, my lord, (cries he, buried in contemplation;) I am greatly oblig'd to you for all your civilities.'---You only laugh at a poor man, (faid the farmer,) however, if you want another glass of wine, there is not a drop left.'---- I have no occasion for any,' said Pharsamond, venting a deep figh .--- Odsflesh! (cried the farmer,) before we part, I must treat you with a curiosity we have in our house. You will be as glad to fee it, as I shall be to show it you. What I mean, is a room fill'd with fine pictures. Folks fay, that they are worth as much as the gold of guineas. Come along with me.'---- Pharfamond followed the peafant; who open'd the door of a room or little gallery, cover'd with pictures.

Our knight admired many of these, which were originals by the best masters .--- How the duce, (will some critic say,) was it possible for Pharsamond, born and bred in the country, and whose best companions were a set of half polish'd country gentlemen, to be a judge of painting? content yourfelf with supposing him an adept in love, and stop there .-- .- Hold, (good critic;) shall I not be allow'd to hazard fome things; and must you be for ever rectifying the flips and overfights that occur in my book? but I will take it for granted, that Pharfamond might have done wrong, in admiring, and preferring some pictures in the gallery. But then he admired. I faid fo, and let that fland. I should be obliged to change many particulars, was I to accommodate myself to your taste in every thing. Let us proceed.

Pharfamond therefore admired many; and as his eyes were running over them all, he was vaftly furpriz'd to meet with the portrait in miniature, of princess Cedalisa. I know not by what accident

that

that of Fatima, her confidant, was found alfo. hanging by that of her miffres; and there is no doubt but that this picture of her's, was an eloquent reproach for the inconstancy of her faithless fquire, whose heart was like a weather-cock.

The moment Pharfamond cast his eves on Ceda. lifa's portrait :--- Heavens! (cries he,) what do ' I behod; permit me, (faid he to the farmer,) to touch it, to embrace it.'----Saying these words, he leapt on a stool, and took down the picture.

Clito, who was wondring why his mafter was in fuch extafy, was himself all rapture, when he found that this portrait resembled Cedalifa. By my life (fays he,) here the is, exactly as when the came into the world. But I never thought her handfome enough to have her picture drawn. How bleft are you, to have a miftrefs in painting! by my troth, you now are as great

as the greatest of our knights-errant.

When Clito had done speaking, Pharsamond cried: ---- Are these then the charming features! * my dearest princess, is it you who appear before me? Gods! how will this adventure end?'----He then imprinted ten thousand kisses on the pieture .--- See here, (fays he,) the mafter-piece of ature, for furely nature never gave birth to any thing more inchantingly beautiful! adoreable Cedalifa! I here repeat the vows I so often made, of loving you eternally. What greater happiness could I meet with, than to touch you? for dear, dear caeature, you gave me your heart; and words could never express how precious it is in " my eves.' How wonderfully you talk!" (cried Clito,) who now was melted by the noble expressions our knight employed, on occasion of an adventure, that reviv'd, in him, the subaltern and confus'd ideas he had of heroic love.

K.3 During

During this the farmer, who had liften'd to Pharfamond's address to the picture, was surpriz'd at the knight's words, when he fancied he heard him declare, that the picture had given him it's heart .--This must be very extraordinary, (fays he to Pharfamond;) how could this picture make you of o valuable a present?'-Says Clito to Pharsamond; ---- The farmer imagines that this picture stretch'd forth it's arms; and gave you it's heart, just as we offer an orange.'---- Says the fquire to the peafant; ---- My master, (honest friend,) fpeaks of the lady who is like this picture.'----Odds me! (cries the farmer;) has the vonder, (I mean the living flesh and bones of the • person who hangs there in colours; has she, (fay you,) given her heart to thy master?' --- Indeed has the,' (replied Clito.)--- Oddsfish, if this be the case, (said the rustic) I have got a secret will bring you to the speech of her anon; and you fhall fee her perking upon her legs, like a crane.' ---- Pharfamond gave no attention to the farmer's words .--- You don't believe me, (continued the • peasant,) and yet I promise that you'll hear her talk and reason like an organ.'--- Clito after laughing at the peafant's comparison, turn'd accidentally his eyes towards the place where hung the portrait in miniature .--- Oons! (cried he, struck with joy, which was excited by the novelty of the adventure more than by love:) ' See there my girl also, who smiling, asks me how I do.'-- Your girl!' (fays the farmer.)---- Yes, my mistress, freplied Clito.] Fetch me a stool, quick, quick. ----Saying which, he took one, jump'd upon it, and pull'd down Fatima's picture.

Nothing could be more grotesque than Clito's figure on this occasion. He knew not how to begin, in order to express his rapturous delight.--• Please to step back a little, Sir, (cries he to his

Mafter ;

Master;) I did not interrupt you, whilst you were talking to your mistress; I therefore must beseech you not to disturb me, now I'm going to chat with mine. However, before I say a word to her, I ought first to testify my joy by caresses.'—— He did so, applying his mouth to the picture; when he smack'd so affectionately, and so loud, that his kisses echoed quite through the gallery.

You kiss so very loud, (fays the farmer,) that her cheek will be flat as a sheet of paper; and your loud smacking might awake one of the seven sleepers,'---- Be easy, (cried Clito,) for heaven's fake, and do not disturb my happiness. Dear, dear Fatima, (adds he,) tis onow that I know all your value; and I should fooner have thought to fee myself Archbishop of Canterbury, than to find you painted. But I wear you shall be no loser by it; for first and foremost, (lovely Fatima!) this is for ever and for aye. I'll go in search of you, winter and fummer, to the world's end; though it were to rain fwords, and I should be dirty as a duck-' hound. Nothing shall check my progress, in quest of a girl worthy of having her picture drawn. I will not, (like my master,) swear to · love you eternally; our parish priest faying, from the pulpit, swear not at all. Satan, (you know,) is very wicked: and, were we to meet with aonother house, charming as that of Clorinna's, ' my oath wou'd fnap like glass. But I now love ' you so dearly, that this ought to serve me for thrice, in case I should happen to forget you ' just so many times."

Whilst Clito was thus expatiating on the continuance of his passion, Pharsamond, whose only luxury was to feast on Cedalisa's picture, lays it on his breast; and surveys it with his eyes, which

KA

were sprightly or tender, according as the impulses of his soul were either strong or melting. All this time, the farmer gaz'd alternately, on our two ramblers, with dumb assonishment, mix'd with a restrain'd desire to laugh. But now Clito directs his eyes to the chevalier. The resemblance in their adventures rais'd his courage; and made him conclude, that it was necessary for him to use the

fame ceremonies as his mafter.

Observing that Pharsamond turn'd, at intervals, his eyes fkywards, and then threw them on the ground; Clito in imitation of him, (but not a little aukwardly,) ffretches forth his neck, to look towards the clouds, and toffes about his head in a frantic manner. 'Twas extafy to him, to meet with an opportunity of exercifing his talents like his mafter. But now he is ending his gestures and writhings. His foliloguy to his miffres's picture, had exhausted a great part of his inclinations to love; and he waited, with some impatience, till his master should have ended his dumb conversation with Cedalisa's picture. The farmer, who, by this time, was tir'd with their grimaces, cried to Clito: --Why don't you speak? What mean all your bowings and scrapings to those pictures? Oddsflesh? am not I, who talk to you, and make answers, worth a thousand pictures, that never once open'd their lips?'-These words, being spoke with some vehemence, awak'd Pharfamond; when he vented fuch a figh, as feem'd to exhauft his whole stock of tenderness. - " How hap-* py, (fays he, laying his hand on the farmer's fhoulder,) are you, in possessing so invaluable a * treasure !'---- A mighty happines indeed!' (replied the peafant;) when Clito going up to him, and holding Fatima's picture in his hand; · How delighted, (fays he) must you be, in hav-6 ing

ing an opportunity of gazing, whenever you will, on this exquiste work.'—— 'A mighty cause for joy! (replied the peasant;) and when I shall have star'd my eyes out, in beholding those two bedawb'd faces, what shall I be the better for it? But gentlemen; to come to the point.'—— 'My lord,' (says Pharsamond, interrupting him,)—— 'O! O! (says the rustic) rather call me countryman, or farmer; for thus I am nam'd by persons not acquainted with me.'—

Pharfamond made no reply to this start, though very ungrateful to his ears; it being quite repugnant to his exalted ideas. --- Could you give " us, (faid he,) those two pictures? -- 'Yes, (replied the peafant) provided you wou'd fay nothing. They are not mine; and should they be missed, after I had let you take them, 'twould presently be said that I had stolen them, and vou know what would then be the confequence. But tell me; how would you do? --- 'That's ono hard matter to fay? (replies Clito;) we need but flide the pictures in our pockets, and the bufiness is done.'---- Fair and foftly, (replied s the peafant,) Oons! you drive Jehu like. You must have come into the world without ceremony, fince you yourfelf use so little with it. These pictures cost me three guineas a piece.' --- They s are not your's, by your own confession, said Clito.'- They were not mine, (cried the ruftic,) a little while ago; but I call them my own, now I offer to fell them you. But, to go on with our bargain; I tell you I won't dispose of them for a farthing less than three guineas a piece.'---- What trumpery is here! (fays Cli-* to;) three guineas each ! (adds he, throwing the picture from him.) -- Three guineas, quoth'a!

the originals perhaps, may be worth fo much, tho' I almost question it.'---- I don't speak of the original, (faid the farmer:) pray look in my face; do I look like a man who deals in the goods you hint at? let the original alone. 'Tis of an

age to dispose of itself.2

Whilst our three originals were engag'd in this contest, two women, one of whom was supported by the other, enter'd the gallery. Pharfamond and Clito, when thefe females came in, had their backs towards them; when both the knight and his fquire, hearing the found of feet, turn'd about. But Gods! how inchanted was our amorous knight, when he perceiv'd that one of thefe women was Cedalifa! They prefently knew one another; and darted mutually, the piercing glances, which our romance-writers lend fo liberally to all illustrious lovers who meet unexpectedly. In a moment, a deadly paleness overspread her cheeks. I pass over the heart beatings, fince it wou'd be impossible to count them; I being persuaded, that the love with which they burnt for each other; and the delight they felt, in meeting in a manner fo fuitable to the impression wrought on their hearts, made these susceptible, at that moment, of such raptures as can be felt only by persons resembling them. For hearts inflam'd with a frenzy, like that of our renown'd pair, in what manner foever the indications of their passion may appear; this must increase in proportion to the marvellous of the adventure; and owe it's rife more to this marvellous, than to the true reason which inspires persons, reciprocally, with love.

Dispatch quickly, (cries a critic;) you lest our lovers languishing, and pale as ghosts, and for what? why truly to tire us with a dissertation on the cause of their impulses, and the number of them. But is this any thing to the purpose? let us therefore:

know

know what became of our heroic couple.-The critic is in the right. My personages are in fo lamentable a state, that it were cruel to defert them at this juncture. But their paleness was not all. On one hand we behold Cedalifa, finking into the arms of Fatima; when her reclin'd head, and her mouth half open, may be confider'd as a fwoon, or rather the most passionate seebleness. Pharfamond, on the other hand, wou'd fain approach, but has not the power to do it, fo greatly weaken'd is he by love. The attitude in which he spies Cedalisa, is a shaft shot directly into his heart, which moves, foftens, and melts him down to fuch a degree, that he is ready to fall into the arms of Clito, who, on this occasion, performs his duty, of squire, with as much grace as any of his predecessors. Pharfamond and Cedalisa, now express their reciprocal passion by eyes half open; the dying glances from which are the nobleft panegyric on their constancy. I know not exactly, whether their feebleness lasted, naturally, the length they continued it to. 'Tis probable our couple found fo many charms therein, as prompted them to spin it out as far as they cou'd. I therefore shall now leave them to all the extafy to which fuch an adventure must necessarily raise them; and digress to Clito, who supports his master, tho' he himself is so enseebled, that he can scarce stand on his legs. Fatima, on whom her lady lean'd; Fatima, (I fay,) though fir'd with a romantic frenzy, (but in a degree far inferior to that of Cedalifa,) was in this respect, much more delicate than Clito: She fancied that, as the had found her lover in so extraordinary a manner, the shou'd make but half the advantage of the fingularity of fuch an adventure, were the to content herself with meerly gazing at him, and protesting how

Waste Levels of

dear he was to her. This reflexion was heightened by the example of her mistress, whose seebleness delighted her to much, that the imagin'd, at their first coming together, herself to be a sharer in one of the farmers meetings, with which chance fometimes bleffes illustrious lovers. Fatima therefore, after the had revolv'd these thoughts, perceiving a feat near her, begins to act the loves, but in a Subaltern degree. For this purpose she totters, and reclines her head with an air of languishment; she half opens her dying eyes, whose glances are dubiously fix'd on Pharfamond's squire. She seems. to draw back, and yet holds her mistress in her arms: in fine, the falls into a chair, but in fo lumpish 2 manner, as denotes the most cruel languishment. Clito perceiving this, found a gentle emotion rife in his bosom. And now the burlesque part of his character, yields to a confus'd remembrance of what he had read in romances. He is melted, after his manner; and is enough fo, to reflect, how he must act, in order to show that he himself is infinitely charm'd, both with his finding Fatima, and with her fenfibility. Thus perplex'd, he first ventures at a figh, which echoes through the gallery. He next turns his head, to fee whether he may dare to fall as Fatima had done; when he perceives a bench behind him; and thereupon instantly meditates the fall, by way of reply to that of his beloved, and which may equal him to his mafter. He now lets his head fink; he shuts and opens his eyes with inexpressible volubility. He attempts to reel, but feems drunk. Less accufnom'd to fuch motions, as from the effence of a tender passion, his feet drag him backwards, quite to the bench; but, at his taking the last step, he contriv'd matters so ill, that he ftruck it with his foot, and kick'd it down. Along with it came our fquire, who fell heavily on the ground, with his

his master in his arms: Pharsamond now bounces his head so hard against one of the feet of the benches, that laying aside, at once, all his methodical feebleness, he sets up a shrill cry; whilst that our squire, hurt in another place, expresses his

grief by roaring out, I am dead.

This was a fad extremity for Cedalifa, who was not so weak, but that she could see her much lov'd chevalier sprawling on the floor. The condition she is in, whether real or sictitious, expresses, in the strongest, and yet most tender light, the extasy she seels in meeting again with her lover. The extasy has taken away her strength; her seebleness is a half swoon; and this seebleness wou'd seem a meer feint, should she rise and aid Pharsamond. She prefers the pleasure, of topping her part in this romantic adventure, to that of succouring her knight, who seels but too sensibly the blow he had given himself; and who resists the pain it gave him, thro' a scruple for mutual weakness.

But methinks the farmer is still in the gallery; and that we left him there a spectator of all these incidents. The half faintings or swoonings, greatly surprized him at first; but the fall of the bench, with that of the squire, turn'd his surprize into the strongest sits of laughter. How ill sated are our two lovers! for in another age, a thousand officious hands, a thousand admirers of their heroic passion, wou'd have slown to their assistance; but for so many incidents to pass under the eye of a peasant, is like throwing pearls before swine. Wondrous effect of chance! the noblest adventure in the whole round of nature, expos'd to the rusticity.

of a clown!

Our farmer therefore laughs till he almost bursts. He dances round and round our knight and his squire. He stares at them, and sneers in their faces. At last, however, his muscles began to recover their naturals.

natural state. All parties had, by this time, been long enough in a fwoon, but no one dar'd attempt to recover them from it. 'Twas expected that some person might come for this purpose; or that the charitable farmer would aid the charm, by helping up one of the four. But this clown behav'd fo, as made the close of the adventure resemble the beginning of it; I mean, that he ended it in as burlefque a manner as it began. - So ho! my lord, (cried he to Pharsamond;) and you his servant; what have you planted yourselves there, like so many trees, to shoot forth again? but Odds my life, f if you don't get upon your legs, I'll refresh each of you with a pale of water, to make you bloffom the fooner.' Finding, after he had fpoke thus, that none of them stirr'd, he went up to Clito, whom fate ever expos'd to some unhappy accident, and pull'd him by his hurt leg. luckless squire's pain was much inflam'd, by this ftretching of his limb, when he roar'd aloud : ---· O the devil take you! you have broke my leg. --- He then fat upon his backfide; and gaz'd at his mafter, who hardly dar'd to fetch his breath, for fear that the least noise should debase the adventure. Will you rife, Sir, (fays he, fcratching his head;) we have been ill a pretty while, and may be well now. This ugly affair had like to have cost me my leg; but I'll take care, another time, how I fall; faying which he rose, and put forth his hand to Pharfamond. And now the knight turning about, and fighing, cries: --· Heavens! where am I?' -- Stretch'd at full length on the ground, (replied Clito;) 'So pray fife, for you lie in a very indecent posture.'-Saying these words, he took his master by one of his arms, and lifted him up. Pharfamond, being now got upon his legs, walks towards Cedalifa, leaning on his squire. 'Twas high time for him to

go

is the

go and recover her from her weakness, she beginning to be tir'd of it. -- ' Is it you, (dear creature, cries he,) whom I fee? are these your love by hands I now touch; he having hold of one of them:) answer me, (fairest of the creation!) Odds bodlikins, cries the peafant,) if Mrs. Betzy does not speak, 'tis a sign she is not alive; for the tongues of women never lie still, till they ' are dead.' -- ' Hold your tongue, (fays Clito, foftly to the clown.)'- Odds flesh!' (cries he.) I myfelf am not dead; and I never speak (mind me!) but when it is proper.' - Cedalisa interrupting the peasant: - ' My dear ' Pharfamond,' (fays she, expanding her eyes, and gazing on him with tenderness;) ' How greatly have I fuffer'd, fince our cruel separation !'-Thus are all women, (faid the clown,) whenthey have loft any thing, they are more active than a dog in a wheel. However, I don't pretend to make a comparison; for I have heard fay, that comparisons are odious, and I know Mrs. Betzy is not a she-dog. But take this away, and 'tis all the same. One day my wife, (and by the way the is dead, for which heaven be prais'd, · loft her needle as the was mending my old flock. ings. The jade! (God rest her soul!) I was going to ring a fine peal in her ear, thinking, (Odds bodlikins!) that the wou'd have burnt out all the candles in the village, in fearthing after it?) at · last (wou'd you believe it?) she found this needle without her looking for it, just as Mrs. Betzy has met with you her fweet-heart.' Whilft the Clown was running on in this wild

Whilst the Clown was running on in this wild manner, Pharsamond and Cedalisa express'd their joy by the strongest transports.—— 'Fate, (cri'ed the chevalier,) has at last brought us together;
'whence I now forget all my past sufferings.'—
During this interval, Clito and Fatima did not lose time.

time. - Ah! my princes, (says he,) (for I dreamt that you wou'd one day be fuch;) you fee me, I fee you, and we fee one another.'-Upon this, observing that Pharfamond kneel'd before Cedalifa, he thought it his duty to do the fame. but was not successful in his imitation. Pharfamond only clasp'd the knees of his fair-one, who: her head fondly reclin'd, gaz'd at her knight, and figh'd. But Clito did not allow himself time to confider how his mafter behaved on this occasion a for falling on his knees, or rather throwing himfelf on the ground, he then, instead of clasping Fatima's knees, fnatch'd at the feet of his beloved. who, afraid of what afterwards happen'd, wou'd gladly have taken them out of the way of his ill

judg'd rapture.

But alas! the motion she made, in drawing them back, only brought them nearer to the amorous Clito, who applied his lips eagerly to them. But was it possible for love to meet with amore shameful reward! These feet, the dear object of the squire's transports, were shod with two dirty slippers, which besmear'd most, unmercifully, his face. This unlucky accident forc'd him to draw back, when his transports were moderated in an instant; the dirt having much the fame effect on his love, as water when pour'd on fire. To this was added another ngly circumstance. Clito was one of those who wipe their nofes on their fleeve; he never using a handkerchief, except when lent him by persons with whom he was in company; and nature had taught him, that a man who wanted to blow his nofe, need only employ his fingers for that purpose. But how should he behave on this occasion? The dirt wou'd dry on his face. He therefore first wip'd it, with his hands, which did not carry off above half the load. But now fpying his miftres's white petticoat; and imagining that this wou'd make him quite

quite clean, he laid hold of it, and rubbed away. The fair waiting-maid blush'd at his freedom; dirt and the fnowy white of a petticoat, making such a contrast as a woman wou'd gladly avoid. Laud! (cries she;) what are you about? why vou have entirely fpoilt my petticoat! you indeed have done the business; and the evil, for the present is past all remedy. Nothing but wash-'ing can cure it.'--- 'l'm very forry,' (replies the fquire, whose face was still daub'd in some places;) ' But I left our house so suddenly, that I had not time to provide myself with handkerchiefs.' - Saying these words he rifes up when he found that his hands were still dirty; but this was a thing below his notice. The fad Fatima now takes up her petticoat; pulls a knife out of her pocket, and scrapes off the heaviest pieces of dirt; during which her joy, for meeting again with Clito fo unexpectedly, is suspended a few moments.

Most women wou'd be chagrin'd, at the spoiling of their geer, (be this said by the by;) I say most women, for fear of disgusting the whole sex; and this word most, should make such as read this, to rank themselves in the number of those excepted; and there is not a single fair-one, but will apply the exception to herself, tho' my criticism is equally levell'd at them all.—But to return to our neat subject.

Clito, who, spite of all his endeavours, had not yet got either his face or hands clean, is resolv'd to go through this adventure in the most tender and engaging manner. For this purpose, snatching Fatima's hand, he imprints a long streak of mire upon it.—— 'Heavens! (cried she,) 'touch me 'not, for you are all over dirt.'—— 'Forgive

me, once again, (faid the fquire;) I did not confider the pickle my hands are in. But come; I'll

210 PHARSAMOND

frun into the kitchen and rub myself clean with a dish-clout.

These words were scarce out of Clito's mouth. when Pharfamond and Cedalifa rofe also, with an intention to leave the gallery. Our farmer had been prefent at these several conversations, which were not fo prolix as they may appear to the reader. Odfbud! (cries he) I'm heartily glad that you are all four acquainted. But harkee; be fure don't you go and tell Mrs. Betzy, that I offer'd to fell her, in painting.'-- The name of Betzy, which Pharfamond and Cedalifa then first took notice of, forc'd a blush from them both. Betzy, was not a name suitable to a hero like Pharsamond; it being incompatible with that grandeur which shou'd be found, in all things, relating to lovers illustrious as our pair. - 'Tis but too • plain, dear princess, (favs Pharsamond,) from what just now shock'd my ear, that the people of this house, are often wanting in refpect to you.' - 'Alas! Sir knight, (fays he,) I am forc'd by fad necessity, to submit to hear every thing they fay. These familiarities are, indeed monstrous; but I must bear with " them."

Whilst they were talking in this strain, they walk'd into a room, in order to inform each other of the several things past during their absence; and to consider how they should conduct themselves for the suture. Fatima, in the mean time, took Clito into the kitchen, where he made himself quite clean; after which they went into the room whither Pharsamond and Cedalisa were retir'd, in order to make the necessary enquiries, and to lay their heads together.

I shall not trouble my reader with the detail of the conversation which pass'd between these four persons; nothing, in my opinion, being more tire-

fome

fome than fuch descriptions, tho' the discourses themselves had been ever so entertaining; and if I myself may have attempted such, I therein imitated Homer. That great poet flumbers sometimes, and I fleep. However, our four characters are got together in a room. They had been long parted; they have ten thousand things to fay; ten thousand measures to take: and 'tis necessary for them to converse together. Let us therefore, (gentle reader) listen to them. You will naturally suppose, that Pharfamond and Cedalifa refin'd on all the exalted fentiments which a noble passion can inspire. Cedalifa, whenever her knight was going to too great lengths, wou'd restrain him, by assuming that air of noble severity which us'd to check the renown'd lovers of antient times, and strike them with awe and reverence. In the fame manner, (but less noble,) Fatima kept down the amorous fallies of Clito. In a word, after the feveral Parties had devoted the first moments, to the rapture of declaring how dearly they lov'd one another; they related the various things which had befallen them ever fince their separation. Pharfamond told all his adventures, but in disguise, (as it were,) and very comformable to his own ideas of things; on which occasion, Clorinna's mad passion for him, cou'd not be forgot; and indeed he dwelt a considerable time upon it. Cedalisa listen'd to him with that earnestness of attention, which romantic personages indulge to those who are telling a tale. Pharfamond related his story, in a style suited to the condition in which Cedalifa imagin'd herfelf. He spake slowly; and, orator like, turn'd his eyes towards Heaven, every time he utter'd a word deferving it. When he was come to his conversation with Clorinna in the garden; this foot, (in his account) was adorn'd with every circumstance which cou'd fit it to the beauty of the adventure. He describ'd a calm

a calm night, lighted by the moon. This terrestrial paradife abounded with walks, made by trees, thro' which the filver rays of this planet darted. The leaves were mov'd by a gentle zephyr: In a word, this night was accompanied with that charming horror, which inspires love, and is adapted to the condition of one who has loft the idol of his foul. He proceeded to the impetuofity with which Clorinna had reveal'd her fondues for him; and describ'd it in those terms which so justly paint the fury of a passion, when victorious over reason and the heart. Cedalifa, at these words, vented a deep figh, and flopp'd him; for she wou'd have acted her part very injudiciously, had she not interrupted her knight on this occasion. Gods! (cried " she,) you make me tremble all over. Was it

oposible that the passion which this woman difcover'd for you should make no impression?

Heavens! (faid Pharfamond,) how barbarous is this suspicion! No, (dear creature!) her passion

only increas'd the love with which I shall be in-

flam'd for you, till death; and should Cupid offer me the hearts of the loveliest princesses in the

world, (together with that of Clorinna's) all this would not be able to lessen my fondness for you."

Pharfamond having faid these words, which spread joy and tranquillity over Cedalisa's countenance, pursued his story. He spake of the battle he had been engag'd in at Clorinna's; expatiated on the total deseat of the enemies which his passion had stirr'd up against him, as also on his triumphant sally. He indeed did not mention the spit, the instrument of his victory; but I can take upon me to affirm, that our knight really forgot, on this occasion, his having ever wielded so very ignominious a weapon. He clos'd the narrative, with his arrival at the house where Cedalisa then was; thanking providence,

providence, over and over, for having directed his

steps thither.

d

d

1-

0

-

15

al

ıg

c,

Cedalifa on the other hand, inform'd our knight. in how disconsolate a manner she had past the days and nights, ever fince her lofing him. In her relation, the every now and then bestow'd the epithet eruel, on that good natur'd woman her mother. But we had better hear the young lady herfelf fpeak a few moments, for this will add a stronger pathos to the relation --- 'How was I tortur'd, after 'you left me!' (cries Cedalifa, and I suppose she has already faid fomething:) 'I first express'd my griefs by complaints, which my mother's anger cou'd not check one instant. My mother did all. that lay in her power to force me to blot you from my memory; and proceeded to fuch lengths, as to endeavour to constrain me to marry the 4 knight with whom you fought; but all her efforts were to no purpose. You, Madam (fays ' I,) have an absolute power over my person; but, with regard to my heart, it shall never be byas'd. At last, she resolv'd to confine me, in hopes ' thereby of making me change my mind; and accordingly I was thrust into a dark room. Will-' my blushes let me continue? I not only was de-' priv'd of my liberty, but shamefully fed (and that ' very sparingly) with the coarsest victuals. I fav ' shamefully, since my struggle ought not to have made my mother descend so very low; and it was never known that forcible methods, how ' violent foever, employ'd against persons of my figure, were unaccompanied by a certain fuitable grandeur: But what cannot love effect, on hearts generous and tender as mine! I oppos'd this out-' rage to the utmost. Finding myself treated in so ' ignominious a manner, I wou'd fometimes whifper to myself, that possibly those whom I suppos'd to be my parents, were not such. My · heroic

214 PHARSAMOND.

heroic fentiments, my heart which differ'd fo widely from theirs, my carriage, in short every thing perswaded me, that those I thought my parents, had got acquainted with me by meer "accident. 'Tis impossible, (wou'd I say to myfelf,) that this woman shou'd be my mother! No, no, I need no other proof than the diffimilitude of our fentiments. At last she grew weary of perfecuting me, as this was in vain; the taking me out of my confinement: sometime after which, I was carried to this house (my mother's ' also.) In all probability, I was remov'd to this place, in no other view than, if possible to drive you from my memory: but (thanks to providence!) chance has eluded the craft of our ene-' mies; and I again am blest with you, spite of all obstacles. My mother is not here now; she going yesterday to her other house, and will return hither to morrow. I therefore, (Sir knight,) know not if I ought to rejoice at our meeting, fince this charm, will, in all probability, be very foon diffoly'd.' Here Cedalifa ended her lamentable narrative. To complete it, there wanted only some boxes on

Here Cedalisa ended her lamentable narrative. To complete it, there wanted only some boxes on the ear; but this was punishent so very ignoble, that her great soul wou'd not permit her to mention it; tho' 'tis certain that our young heroine, was, every now and then, cust'd by her mother, who was less scrupulous as to the manner in which she punish'd her daughter.

When Cedalisa had ended her tale;— 'My inchanting princess! (says he,) 'twould not be in the power of language, to express the rage with which I am fir'd, against those who have us'd

you so shamefully! but now, all my resentment must yield to more important cares. Since fate

(my angel) has been fo gracious as to bring us to-

gether, let us take advantage of it's indulgence. Expose'yourself no longer to the groveling treatment of a woman, who, (as you justly observe,) cannot possibly be your mother. Doubt not, (fair inchantress!) but that providence, which furely made choice of you, to serve as an example to mortals, of the great, the mysterious conduct of Destiny; will one day inform you, by means of ' fome extraordinary incident, who are your true parents. Your doubt, whether you fpring from the woman who has behav'd so ill towards you, is an inspiration you ought to cherish; such thoughts arising in the bosoms of those only, on whom Heaven has stamp'd the noblest characteriflicks of dignity. I will own farther; I have a thousand and a thousand times, whisper'd (to ' myself,) the same with regard to my parents, as you observe concerning your's. Ah! what shall either of us believe, wou'd we not credit that in-' ternal light, that pierces the thick cloud in which our extraction is involv'd; and gives us a full per-' fuafion, by certain fecret impulses, concerning our exalted birth? this woman, (you fay,) under whose despotic power you now groan, is not at present in this house, but will come hither tomorrow. Let us therefore make a proper advantage of her absence. 'Tis certain, indeed, that my valour wou'd furmount all the obstacles which ' cou'd be oppos'd to it's glorious efforts; but then fome unforeseen, unlucky accident might check it's progress. Now, whilst nothing stops you, take a resolution (dearest princess!) to follow me; let us go to places more worthy of you, there to fecure yourself from the insolence of your persecutrix. Rely on my conduct; firmly affur'd 4 that all my actions will be directed by eternal respect. We shall not want an asylum; for know that princes, (the greatest princes on earth,) will 6 be

1-

n

h

d

nt

te

0-

r,

216 PHARSAMOND.

be proud to offer you one, and think themselves infinitely honour'd in ferving you. Let us therefore, (dear angel!) fet out.'- 'Ah! Sir knight!' (cried Cedalifa, with an heroic tone and gesture, and fuch an affectation of magnanimous modesty, as was requifite to the part, which her enthusiasm prompted her to act;) Ah! my lord; if the forebodings, with regard to my real birth, do not deceive me, reflect that perfons of my rank ought to yield to death, rather than venture at the flep which you require me to take. No my lord: I will not cast such a blemish on my spotless character; Heaven will interpose in my favour, without my being forc'd to have recourse to guilt, Let us therefore wait till it shall determine my defliny.'--- Had Pharsamond perus'd a certain tragedy, where we find (if I mistake not) the fol-· lowing lines,

You trust entirely to the fate of battles, Which, after all, perhaps, may not revenge you.

Had our knight, (I say) read this, I doubt not but he wou'd have made the application. As to myself, who am persuaded that my brain is less addled than that of our hero, (tho' so great a one,) I cou'd not resist the itch I had to quote this distich. With regard to Pharsamond, he reply'd in a sar more religious strain.—' It is our duty, adorable princes, (says he,) to wait for the decision of Heaven; but Heaven never works miracles in our savour, except we ourselves endeavour by pains and foresight, to forward them. Providence, to attract reverence, needs only discover to mortals, the progress of the most extraordinary adventures; but then our endeavours must accelerate and

s and deferve fuch miracles. 'Tis providence that on now inspires me in your favour; and the counfels I give are fuggested by it's will.'- With horror, must I view the proposal you make me! Isaid Cedalisa, with a Auctuating air, denoting a faint, but methodical relistance;) ' For in heroic fouls, every impulse of the heart ought to be fo s as that weakness may always triumph, (but almost imperceptibly,) over pride.' - Now who cou'd be a greater adept in such matters than Cedalisa? this being the soul (as it were) of her love. No! my lord,' (added she) to the words I before put into her mouth;) 'No! I cannot comoly with your propofal: my pride, together with the diftinguish'd character which nature gave me, by my birth; all, all oppose your wishes in this respect. Mention it therefore no more, (good my lord;) but let me deserve, by an ever prudent conduct, the attention which heaven may please to indulge me.' - Since it is so, Madam, (said Pharsamond,) I'll have done, and will urge you no farther; continue therefore here, perpetually expos'd to fresh infults; give to your miscreant enemies, an opportunity of separating us, for ever! farewel. I must leave you, and indeed all the moments I pass here, will be so many darts. against which I wou'd secure my fad heart, fince you are determin'd to fee me no more. Gods! cou'd I have imagin'd, that the violent s passion with which I burn for you, wou'd one day prove an unceasing torment to me! adieu, Madam; I sly, (fince you will have it fo,) to end, far from your presence, a life which my valour, and heaven together, might, perhaps, have render'd conspicuous; had not it's progress been check'd, by it's being my ill fate to adore VOL. L

د[ر

,

1

2

t

it

I

a-

h-

lt.

e-

2-

nge

to less ne,)

far able of

our pains to

rtals,

erate

218 PHARSAMOND.

an ungrateful woman.' --- ' Cruel, cruel, man! (cries Cedalia, venting a deep figh,) what proof do you require of my love? thrice hapless passion, must all things be facrific'd to it? but I have done, (my dear lord;) and will truft you with my deftiny, fince you triumph over all my arguments; yet remember, that this heart. whose refistance you overcome, is such an one as you, (by respect and submission,) must preserve; for ever. I therefore, on the promise you make, abandon myself entirely to your conduct.'- ' Dearest princess! (cried the amorous knight,) 'tis now I certainly know you ' love me, and that -: But (gentle reader,) I did not intend to spin out this conversation between Pharfamond and Cedalifa to fuch a length, it being too extensive already.

Ye writers! promise nothing; and, above all, fwear not to perform; for often, the very things you promis'd, are those which are least complied with; and where we are made to expect the nobleft beauties, we meet with the greatest deformities. As to you, Mr. Critic, who possibly may fay, that this conversation is superfluous; I wou'd advise you, as a friend, to throw away my book; for should you be so idle, as to find fault with every thing worthy of censure in it, your criticism wou'd be as extensive as my work, and thus require a Critique also. But why should I fancy that this conversation is too prolix? on the contrary, I say, that 'tis of a fit length; and I wou'd stake and wager, that there is nothing improper in it, except the digression. But to return to our subject, which I own is not always carried on with a proper spirit; tho' I hope to content my readers e'er we end.

Such then was the discourse between our heroic couple, who now resolv'd not to set out till night.

'Twill

'Twill naturally be suppos'd, that neither Dame Margaret, her husband, nor any fervant of the house met, on this occasion, with our pair of lovers ; for the placing Pharfamond among fuch dangerous enemies, wou'd have been throwing him into the lion's den. Each of the houses, belonging to Cedalifa's mother, had it's respective domesticks. Those belonging to the place where we now are, were not acquainted either with Pharfamond or his squire; whereby Cedalisa had a good opportunity of paffing the day with her inamorato, upon the supposition that he was a friend of her mother's. Our couple were to steal away in the night; by prevailing, if possible, on some one of the servants to provide them horses; or by taking them, themfelves, out of the stable, shou'd there be an opportunity for it. Fatima and Clito were then call'd. and inform'd of all the measures which had been taken; when Cedalifa gave her waiting-woman the necessary orders. Dinner being ready, Fatime went, with a natural air, to prepare the fervants > in order that they might not be furpriz'd, at the very hearty welcome our guests wou'd find. The farmer, who had been an eye-witness to the tender languishments which so remarkably diffinguish'd the unexpected meeting of our lovers, contented himself with laughing; with wond'ring at the mighty fondness between them; and was as much deceiv'd as the reft. The victuals being brought in, our hero fat down at table with his mistress; during which Fatima and Clito, as inferior personages, eat apart. The repast being ended, our four lovers, went and walk'd in a small inclos'd grove, or in a wide-extended garden, for it may be either, (I cannot exactly fay which,) but am oblig'd to chuse one of the two. Were I speaking of lovers, agreeably to our modern customs, I should fix them, on a terrals, or in L 2 a room :

el, nat p-

er rt,

ne eife our

he ou r,)

th,

all,
igs
ied

ies.

u'd k;

ery u'd

his

ay,

ept et, per

we

oic ht. a room; but in romantic subjects, the only places proper for lovers to walk in, are gardens, groves or forests; so that, were it necessary for me to give them an airing, a thousand times a day, I shou'd be forc'd, (except I ventur'd at an innovation) to make one of the three places above-

mention'd the fcene.

Theutmost Icou'd do for my fatigu'd reader wou'd be, to change them to deep folitudes, and boundless vistos; intermixing them with planted groves, and fuch like. But, after all, this difguise wou'd be pretty much like that which Monsieur Jourdain's mafter of Philosophy, gave to the compliment the city squire attempted to make to a marchioness:

I shall therefore observe, that our two dovers went into a large grove, and were follow'd by Fatima and Clito. But how greatly were Cedalifa and Pharfamond delighted on this occasion! "Twas here he enjoy'd, at full leifure, the rapturous fatisfaction of meeting again with the idol of his foul; but of meeting her with fuch circumstances, as chance feem'd to have indulg'd him, in conjunction (as it were,) with his own ideas. Even his prefent fituation was inchantment. To be alone with his ador'd Cedalifa; and where? in shady allies; places form'd, by nature, for passions of this kind. Both our knight and Cedalifa, walk'd Some time without opening their lips: a filence indeed truly mysterious; and alone expressive of the noble passion that mutually inflam'd their hearts.

Our knight feem'd to take every step in catdence. He assum'd a respectful air, but of a disferent kind from that seen among us; it being worthy both of him and his worship'd fair-one. Cedalisa acted her part, no less admirably, in this dumb scene. She walk'd with an air of modest pride; her eyes shot grave and gentle glances; which had

A CONTRACTOR DESIGNATION AND CONTRACT

WHITE A

0

1

) -

d

1-

s,

d

s

ne

3:

70

d

e-

11

p-

ol

n-

n,

IS.

o

in

ns

4

ce

of

ts.

a-

if-

or-

la-

nb

le;

ad

fo

fo prodigious an effect on the enamour'd pair; that both of them called to mind, (but confusedly,) a thousand situations, like to the present, of knights and princesses; were so sweetly inchanted, that they fancied themselves to be exactly like the illustrious personages read of in romances.

After they had walk'd a little way, Pharfamond, fir'd with enthusiasm, and wrapt in romantic frenzy, politely let go Cedalisa's hand, which he, till then, had hold of. He next spit, to give himfelf an opportunity of speaking more emphatically; when, after this short preparation, which, to such of my readers who have a just idea of matters of this kind, will appear as a prelude to what was to follow; our chevalier fell upon one knee, and thus address'd his princess Cedalisa; whose mind, (now at unison with that of her lover,) receiv'd the knight's compliment, with that air of habitude, or vather indifference, which persons discover for things that are familiar to them.

Great princess! (said our heroic madman,)
how shall I find words to thank you, for the glorious returns you make to Pharsamond's passion?

O no, (charming madam!) I am not so ungrate,
ful as to fancy that it will be possible for me e-

ful as to fancy that it will be possible for me ever to do any thing, (I will not say to equal,)

but even to come near the obligations by which I am bound, for the favours you indulge me. Twill be extremely necessary for me to observe, (by the by,) that the reader, on occasion of the word favours, must not give a loose to his imagination. He is to know, that princes of romance have a style paculiar to themselves; and that by the word favours, is here meant kindness, they being

fynonimous.——Proceed we in our story.

'Tis therefore no ways my intention, (adds
'Pharsamond,) to pretend that I shall ever be able

to return your goodnels. I burn for you with a tronger

ftronger passion than ever inslam'd a mortal breast.

Permit me, (dear madam,) to express myself thus. My heart is all I have to offer; and be

affured that, as your goodness is infinite, my love

for you will be equally boundless.'——Our chevalier, after this short speech, cast down his eyes modestly, waiting for the answer of his harangu'd princes; who assum'd a nobly-tender look, by way of prelude to her reply; for the reader is to know that each sex, in this species of love, employs different methods, tho' of the like tendency.

Pharfamond was all this time on his knees .-

Generous knight, (replied Cedalifa,) the priceless price with which you repay the fentiments of my

heart, is enough to fatisfy the most ambitious princess upon earth; 'tis the only one worthy of

us both, and which I befeech you to preferve me

eternally. Be not therefore, hereafter, afraid of

declaring that you love me; I being as much delighted to hear, as to imagine, those fond words;

and know, that it will be impossible for you to

pronounce them, so often as I shall wish to hear

them.'—In this manner our generous pair utter'd the two first periods of their harangue. Twould tire the reader, was I to go through with it; suffice it that I observe, the rest was of a piece; and our knight, when Cedalisa had done speaking, took one of her hands which fhe presented to him, and kiffed it respectfully. On this occasion he difcover'd much more discretion than most of our juvenile inamoratos, who, in an inftant, find the Secret of kissing greedily, and as tho' they wou'd pull to pieces, the hands of their miftress, whenever they have got hold of them. But (giddy, rash youths!) imitate Pharfamond; his eafy, his awful manner of addressing, shows much more fondness than an inconfiderate heat of passion, which often weakens and dies away thro' excess.

What does this heedless scribler himself mean? will a young impetuous reader cry: how unfeafonable is this reflection of his! e'en let him make love after his way; but then let him leave us ours. -Hold, (gentle reader;) I have reason to criticize the public. In my opinion, an impetuous love is infinitely below a respectful passion; and, if I might venture to utter a bad maxim, I wou'd obferve, (to you who think my critique improper;) that the most infallible way of attracting love, is to gain the heart; and awake it in that tenderness, whose feeds, are always there. I cou'd urge farther, (to your inamoratos,) that your impetuofity has no other effect than to raise a short liv'd passion, which can never fatisfy persons of a delicate turn of mind; a passion, the impressions whereof affect the fenses rather than the heart, which shou'd be the only object (at least the principal) of your conquest. But to return to the respectful Pharsamond. Some evil spirit must surely be for ever at my elbow, and fuggefting these ill-tim'd reflections; and thus make me drop my chief personages, instead of bringing them upon the stage.

After Cedalisa had indulg'd so much savour to Pharsamond, she made a sign to him, which no one but himself cou'd have understood; our chevalier instantly knowing, that it signified a permission for him to rise. They then struck farther into the wood, where I shall leave them to all the extasy of a passion which chance had so highly savour'd, and suited so admirably to their inclinations; in order to digress, a sew moments, to two subaltern characters, (I mean Clito and Fatima,) who sollow'd their superiors, but at a little distance.

The stay which Clito had made in the house of Pharsamond's uncle, at their return from the first day's adventure; the good cheer he met with at Clorinna's, and the kindness indulg'd him

L4

by her waiting-maid, together with Pharfamond's combat; all these things had a little deadned the romantic ideas which his brain, (in proportion to it's capacity,) had imbib'd: but then his unexpected meeting with Fatima; the picture and even the actual presence of this girl, had reviv'd all these impressions, in their sull strength. Let me add, that he also was excited by Fatima, whose soul still preserv'd it's tenderness, occasion'd by the constraint she had shar'd with her mistress; and the missortunes which the knight had brought upon them both. They already had enjoy'd one conversation, in which they mutually tasted the pleasure arising from an agreeable surprize.

Clito was then entertaining his mistress with a passionate gravity; whilst Fatima, on the other hand, rose to a fondness of the serious kind; so that it might be said, that our subaltern couple, were, (within a hair's breadth) the apes of their heroic.

Superiors.

Whilst Pharsamond was falling on his knee, in order to address Cedalisa; Clito, who took notice of his master's attitude, thought it so charming, and so nearly resembling what he had heard concerning other inamoratos in the like circumstances; that, quite intoxicated with love and pleasure, he surprized Fatima, by prostrating himself on a sudden, and in the middle of a phrase, which did not seem to promise any such conclusion. However, this surprize lasted but a moment; and only long emough to raise his imagination to such a pitch of extravagance, as was requisite for him to attempt this sudden and unexpected compliment.

I might as well continue filent," (fays Clito, lifting up his head, as though he had been going to gaze at the weather-cock of the highest steeple,)

As to pretend to inform you, how overjoy'd I

am to see you by my side; for though I am oblig'd

blig'd to employ many words to express this, I' nevertheless, (madam,) seem to have said nothing; so greatly does my tender heart overslow with particulars, which it will be impossible for me to explain. I yet doubt, that you have good sense to scruple the truth of all I wou'd gladly say to you. Thus I console myself, by the sight of all your rare perfections, without regarding how I ought to describe what I seel; to do which, (madam,) would be equally difficult, as for a weak arm to draw up a bucket of water from a deep well. I make use of this simile, hoping that it may please; and that you will admit it in lieu of the many fine things which I wou'd fain

utter, but cannot for the foul of me.' Fatima, had this speech been pronounc'd in a less heroic voice, and unadorn'd with the obliging title abovemention'd, must have thought the simile Comething, mean and vulgar; but the word, Madam, with which the enthusiastic squire had grac'd his fair-one, stunn'd her to such a degree, that her hands shook with a gentle emotion; and her cheeks were instantly suffus'd with the most delightful red. And now after Clito, (who still held his neck stretch'd forth like a crane,) had done speaking: - My lord, (fays Fatima,) you need not make use of words to prove your passion for me; it being fufficiently display'd by the tenderness of your actions. Your journes, and the great trouble I have put you to, show the excels of your fondness for me, infinitely better than the choicest words you cou'd employ for

that purpose."
Stop a moment, (replied Clito, interrupting her;) and call to mind, (Madam,) whereabouts you lest off in your speech; it being so very beautiful, that I wou'd not lose it for the world.

But then I cannot permit you to go an inch far-

226 PHARSAMOND.

ther, without thanking you a thousand and a thousand times, for the title of Lord, with which you were graciously pleased to honour me. 'Tis good to bestow favours on grateful people. Because I call'd you Madam; you, (forsooth) in a trice, are so very obliging as to entitle me, my · Lord. Now this puts a comical thought into my head. Who knows whether you may not really be Madam, and I, my Lord? We, perhaps, were both chang'd at nurse. Harkee now; · I'd stake my hat, that we neither of us are mistaken; for had not this really been the case, we could never (for the foul of us,) have gues'd any thing like it. - 'Alas! my Lord,' faid our Mrs. Abigail, whose enthusiasm was raised still ' higher by these words,) 'You possibly may have hit upon the thing; and I will own, that the " more I reflect upon this circumstance, the more I am persuaded of the truth of what you ob-· ferv'd.' - Body of me! Madam, (fays the squire,) you must no longer doubt it. D'ye observe how naturally I call you Madam? tho' you, perhaps, may fancy that I use art on this occasion: but believe me, 'tis pure nature; that word coming upon my tongue without my once fearthing for it. There furely must be something more in all this than we at prefent under-" fland."

With regard to myself, (says Fatima,) the title of Lord, which I gave you, came voluntarily from my lips; and I continued to bestow it, without considering that I honour'd you with one title more; so that, my Lord.'——Charming! (says Clito,) this title is as familiar to my dear Fatima, as her own name. It comes, (adds he) as pat from your mouth as a bullet from a cannon. This being the case, Madam.

What think you of the matter? Woe

S

n

y

0

t

-

[-

C

y

ır

11

e

e

e

)-

13

e

3

is

it

e :-

e

1-

N

h

-

y

,

et

1.

e

to those who may fancy us infignificant persons! but to prevent our superiors from being offended at our refusal to attend upon them any loneger; let us first try, for some days, whether our tongues will always run on in the fame strain; there being no room to doubt that, in case we are the persons we fancy ourselves, but we shall be for ever repeating those charming titles. We, (my dear lady,) shall be like watches: when 'tis twelve a clock, they must point out the hour. Let us therefore continue in our fervice some days longer; for remember the proverb, hafte ' makes waste. I must inform you, (Madam,) that, ever fince I have been my Lord Pharfa-' mond's squire, not a two-penny piece have I ' receiv'd from him. But now, the longer I shall ferve him, the more he will run in my debt, and this will be fo much ready money; for he is of an honourable family; and were I to leave him abruptly, I shou'd be many pounds the worse for it.' Ah! my good Lord.' (fays she.) Excellent! (replied Clito;) you have not ' forgot my Lord; go on I befeech you.'-' How can you (fays Fatima,) want so much money? leave to venal fouls the plague of heaping up riches.' - Your humble fervant, for that, (replied Clito;) the most valuable thing in this world next to the amorous profession, is ' money. I really love it; and, (body of me!) I ' must have a good fancy, fince I never met with one ' person who hated it. But let's talk no more about these things. The whole depends on our tongue; ' and shou'd it, three or four days hence, still repeat . the two charming words with which we both are ' fo much delighted, I shall be fo proud! But now I think on't, I intend to call you my Princefs:

contribution of their chicker

are greatly step to digital to the

cess: for, (faith and troth,) when a man can once make himself a great lord, 'tis as easy for him to turn king, as a count.' - 'You, (my Lord, faid Fatima,) may call me as you will; and be affur'd, that I shall always be pleas'd what name soever you may think fit to give " me.' - 'Psha! (cries Clito,) you indeed fay fo; but suppose now I should take it into my head to style you my Ape; why, you wou'd not find this name as fweet as fugar." The word Ape rais'd a blush in Fatima's cheeks; fuch an expression having never dropp'd before, from a gentleman of Clito's profession. The squire observing how the redden'd: ---- Why your face is as fiery (faid he,) as if you really was an ape. But let not this trouble you, (good " Madam,) for if you are an ape, depend upon it, " that I'll be a monkey."

These low similitudes and expressions, employ'd by Clito, mortified Fatima extremely. 'Tis not but our squire had some happy intervals, during which he appear'd such as his fair-one desir'd he shou'd; but, in conversations of any length, his buffoon character always got the ascendant over the soreign impressions with which the tenderness of

£

d

t

a

ii

Ь

fe

had

romances had fill'd his head.

Whilst that Clito and Fatima were thus debating on matters; firmly determin'd to be, one day,
as illustrious as those whose domesticks they were;
Cedalisa and Pharsamond, who, by this time, had
struck into the most shady part of the wood, were
abandoning themselves to all the delight of their
amorous situation; when a shower of rain fell,
which oblig'd them to quit the place.

'Twas now that Cedalifa found it difficult to act, to advantage, in her character of a princess. The rain grew violent, and her clothes wetter and wetter; and it happen'd very unluckily, that she

had that day put on (tho' in the country,) one of her finest gowns. The rain fell still heavier, when the chevalier gave her his hand, to help her to go faster; but then each step was taken in such cadence, as was no ways derogatory to the heroic gravity which a princess ought to display on every occasion. Still this was some little trial to our heroine's heart, now divided between the vexation of spoiling her clothes, (which she might have sav'd by running sast;) and the cruel necessity of ob-

ferving the romanic decorum.

0

1

-1

;

,

e

r

19.

d

t,

4

ot i

ng

he

115

he.

of.

at-

y,

re;

nad

ere

eir

ell

es.

and The had

They, by this time, were got back to the house, with Fatima and Clito, who (if we except a few particulars) had observ'd the rules of decorum The night was drawing on apace, our exactly. four personages having spent a great many hours in roving up and down. Clito, who had a wonderful digestion, now felt such a gnawing at his stomach, as did not leave his mind at full liberty. Fatima ask'd him, but to no purpose, several questions, which he ought naturally to have anfwered: but our fquire, being much fonder of a luncheon of bread, than the most melting expresfions, reply'd only by thort monofyllables, heightned fometimes by half yawnings, the infallible indications of his violent hunger. He had long been prompted to confess his wants to Fatima; but as their conversation had call'd up his romantick ideas; and that his heart began, very feriously, to delight in them; he was restrain'd by a noble shame, and prevented from confessing that he was hungry; he reflecting, that the extaly of being with his beloved ought to supply the place of every other earthly thing; and even suspend, as it were, his lenles.

Fatima

230 PHARSAMOND

Fatima observing his heaviness, reproach'd him obligingly on that account, in manner following: What uneafiness is this (my Lord,) that hangs about you? What fadness is it that fits brooding over your heart?' -- 'Oons! Madam, (cries he, with an angry tone;) it vexes me to the foul, to find that you perceive my fadness.' - What's that you say? (said Fatima;) is it possible you can desire to conceal any thing from me?' - 'No, (replied our fquire,) I wou'd gladly lay open my heart to you, naked as I was born; and yet I wish you might never know what ails me at this inftant.'-Scarce had he pronounc'd these last words, when the afflicted Fatima, clasp'd him with an air of the utmost fondness, conjuring him to tell her the cause of his anguish. What the devil's the matter? (cries he;) pox take this curiofity of your's. - ' My Lord, (fays fhe,) be fo gracious as not to confound the disquietude of my heart, with what you call curiofity. What can I think of your obstinate refusal, to inform me about 'your ailment?'--- 'Be eafy, (replied Clito,) for I've neither got a fever nor the itch; and I wow and protest to you, that none of my rela-' tions are dead; or if they shou'd, heaven rest their fouls.' -- ' Ah! my good Lord,' (faid our Mrs. Abigail, with a fort of anger, rais'd much more by the filly reasons which Clito sometimes gave, than from a defire to know what was the matter with him;) 'Ah! my Lord, you'll deprive me eternally of rest, should you barbarously refuse to make me the confidant of your pangs.'-I feel none I tell you,' (cries our squire.)-In vain (fays she) you endeavour to disguise those which rack you, I,'— Oons! (cries Clito,) you princesses must be as, dull as beetles; excufe,

:

\t

t!

it

e

al

ur

u,

ht

ce

af-

it-

ıse

not ith of out o,)

rest faid is'd mewas deusly

hofe ito,) exufe,

cuse, (good Madam,) what I now say; but you are too pert and obstinate. However, I must be fore'd to tell you what's the matter with me, otherwife no peace shall I have. To out with it then. (Madam,) tho' I really blush for shame; you must know that I am confounded hungry. I am " us'd to four meals a day; a bad habit, indeed, I cannot, for the foul of me, conquer. And fo it happens that, whenever hunger feizes me, and I have nothing to eat, I'm more melancholy than a tree without leaves.' --- 'Twas vour own fault, my Lord, (fays Fatima,) that vou fuffer'd on this occasion. But come with me, and I'll foon fatisfy your cravings .-Clito then follow'd his fair-one into the kitchen, where he recover'd his usual gaiety; and grew as fond as ever of adventures of chivalry.

The End of the First VOLUME.

1

